

THE
FOOL OF QUALITY;

OR, THE
H I S T O R Y
OF
HENRY EARL OF MORELAND,

BY MR. BROOKE.

V O L. II.

A NEW EDITION,
GREATLY ALTERED AND IMPROVED.

D U B L I N :
PRINTED FOR P. WOGAN, No. 23, OLD-BRIDGE.
1796.

THE
FOOL OF QUALITY
OF THE
HISTORICAL
HENRY VIII OF NORFOLK



NEW EDITION
OF THE
HISTORICAL
HENRY VIII OF NORFOLK
BY
J. H. M. J. VAN DER HAEGHE
PUBLISHED BY
J. H. M. J. VAN DER HAEGHE
1800

THE
FOOL OF QUALITY;
OR, THE
H I S T O R Y
OF
HENRY EARL OF MORELAND.

C H A P. XII.

NEVER did Harry feel himself so deeply mortified, so debased in his own eyes, as when my lord's footman, in terms and with an action so uncommonly respectful, had stooped and kissed his hand. His heart, but just before, had whispered to him, that the manner in which he had admonished the young nobleman, expressed more of the pride and insolence of his own temper, than any friendly intention to reform the faults of another; and he already began to suspect, that the manner in which he had dispensed his own bounty, shewed the same ostentation which he meant to reprove,

VOL. II. B and

and with which he had been so highly offended in his lordship.

Thus disgusted with himself, and consequently with all about him, he turned away from his companions, walked sad and silent homeward, and passing softly through the hall, withdrew to his own chamber.

James had followed Harry at such a distance as just to keep him in sight, and entering where his master sat reading in the parlour, Mr. Fenton enquired eagerly after his boy. James cast at his master a look of much solemnity, and shaking his head in token of concern, Ah, Sir, said he, I am sorry to tell you that master Harry, to day, was not altogether so good a boy as I could have wished. Indeed I observe of late that, at times, he is apt to be very sudden and passionate. I doubt, Sir, we shall have woful doings by and by; he has terribly abused and battered the son and heir of the earl of Mansfield, one of the worthiest noblemen in all England. To be sure we shall have sad complaints against him. I was present at all that passed; and truly master Harry was very much in fault.

You delight me, you transport me, cried Mr. Fenton; my only affliction was that he had no faults. I want him to have faults, such faults as may make him feel them. But tell me minutely, as particularly as you can, how this affair happened. James then gave a special detail of what we have recited. Whereupon Mr. Fenton exclaimed, O, my noble, my generous, my incomparable boy! where is he? let me see him, what is become of him?

Upon enquiry, Mrs. Susan reported that she had seen him stealing softly up stairs. Mr. Fenton then taking his book in his hand, stole up after his Harry; and opening his chamber door with the least noise possible, saw him seated, in a dejected attitude,

tude, in a far corner of the room; and looking attentively at him, perceived that he had been in tears.

He thereupon took a chair, and gently seating himself beside him, What is the matter my Harry, he said, what ails my love? Don't ask me, don't ask me, Sir, cried Harry; I dare not tell you, indeed I dare not. You would love me no longer, you would hate me, if I should tell you. Hate you my darling! cried Mr. Fenton, that is quite impossible; I can never hate you, my Harry. But come, be free with your friend, tell me openly and honestly, for what do you think I should hate you? For my faults, Sir; for my faults. To be sure there is not in the world so bad a boy as myself; and what is worse than all that, when I think and mean to do better than ever, something comes in the way and spoils the whole, and so turns all the good that is in me into nothing but naughtiness.

Here, Harry could contain no longer, but burst into a passionate gush of tears and sobs; and Mr. Fenton tenderly embracing him, and taking him on his knee, and clasping him to his bosom, gave way to the kindred emotion that swelled in his own breast, and mingled his joyful tears with those of his Harry.

As soon as the passion of these two friends had subsided, Harry began to take new courage from the caresses of his dear dada, who, as he sensibly felt, would never hate or forsake him, however he might condemn and detest himself.

Well then, dada, says he, since you are so very good, I will trust you with my story, so far as it has to say to the little that I can remember of my faults in it.

You must know that I had no sooner got into your field, that you gave me for our plays, than a young master came up to us, so grandly dressed and attended, and with such a saucy air, that he

seemed to say in his own mind, all these are but dirt in comparison of myself.

As I looked at him, he brought to my mind the story you once told me of Hercules, who was poisoned by his fine coat. So I began to pity him, and I believe, to despise him too; and that you know was not right; for you told me that whoever despises another grows worse than the one he despises, and falls below him; while he thinks to set himself above him; but that did not come into my head at the time.

And so, Sir, to shew us all that he did not matter money, or that he loved mischief the better of the two, he took out a handful of silver and threw it among my companions, to set them by the ears; and this provoked and began to make me very angry with him; and thus one fault brought me into another after it, like Water my chickens come clock.

But this did not satisfy my young lord, for they called him lord, but he must take out a crown and offer it to any two of my companions that would box for it. So a stranger that was just come, offered to box any one in the company for it; but I do not repent of my beating him, because he was the challenger.

But, the worst is yet to come, dada. There was some of my companions who refused to join in the scramble for the money, and that pleased me very much; and so to reward them I took out a handful of money, and gave them a crown a piece. But, you know, I need not have taken out more money than I meant to give them, if it was not partly to shew my lord that I had as much money as himself; and so I got myself up to the head and ears in the very same fault that I found with him.

Now comes the worst of all. For, growing proud and conceited, as if I had no one fault in the world; and as if the like of me was only fit to reprove

prove others and teach them their duty; I desired the fine master to take himself home, and since he was a lord to learn also to be a gentleman. Upon that he gave me a blow, which I deserved very well; but I did not matter his blow a fillip, if I had not thought it an affront before my companions. So my passion began to rise, and I gave him half a stroke; but unluckily it hit him full in the nose, and I am afraid he is hurted very sadly.

Besides all, dada, I know well enough there will come sad complaints against me, and so I shall bring trouble and disturbance upon you; and that is grief upon grief.

Do not fear for me, Harry, I shall do well enough says Mr. Fenton. But, Harry, you have not told me near as great news as you thought to do. I knew all along that you had a very naughty boy within you; but I forbore to tell you so, because I rather wished you should make the discovery yourself; and now, God be praised! you have found out the secret.

And what good will it do me, dada, to know that I am bad, when I do not know how to make myself better? for to-day, I thought and meant to be very good, and yet found myself, in the end, to be worse than ever. But, as you say, to be sure I have been very bad, though I hardly knew any thing of the matter till now. I now remember how I had like to murder poor Mr. Vindex with the sword; and a hundred other things, if I could bring them to mind. What shall I do then, dada, what shall I do to grow good?

I will tell you, my Harry, says Mr. Fenton. And as you have generously entrusted me with one secret, that of having a very bad boy within you; it is but fair that I should entrust you with another secret, which is that of having an exceeding good boy within you.

What,

What, two boys in one, dada, how can that be? It is even so, my darling; you yourself told me as much. Did you not say that, this very day, the one was struggling and fighting within you against the other? that the one was proud, scornful, ostentatious, and revengeful; the other humble, gentle, generous, loving, and forgiving? and that when the bad boy got the better, the good boy took him to task, and reprimanded and severely rebuked him, and made him cry bitterly?

What you say, indeed, dada, is something very like it; only I cannot think how one boy can be two boys. Do you remember, Harry, what you read last night in the Old Testament, about Rebekah the wife of Isaac, when she was with child? Yes, very well, Sir. As how she was with child with twins, "and the children struggled together within her; and she said, if it be so, why am I thus? and she went to enquire of the Lord." Very right, my love; and I now say to you what God then said to Rebekah. I do not mean that you have two boys within you, of the bodily bulk, features, and shape of yourself; but that you have two different spirits or principles within you, which, like Esau and Jacob, have quite different and adverse natures, inclinations, and desires; the one prompting and hurrying you into all that is evil, the other inviting and leading you into all that is good. So you see, Harry, and you have felt that, like Rebekah, you have your own Esau, and your own Jacob, struggling within your bosom: and the war between them shall never cease, till the one shall have wholly conquered and subjected the other.

To make this matter plainer and clearer to you, my darling, I will tell you a pretty story out of the book that is in my hand.

Cyrus was a king and a great conqueror, but in his private capacity, a very virtuous man. On a day,

day, some of his captains, just returned from an expedition, informed him that they had brought him the greatest wonder in the word, a young princess called Panthea, whom they had taken captive, and whose charms exceeded all that could be imagined of woman.

Cyrus, as I told you, was virtuous. He was already married; and he dreaded running the risque of being seduced from his honesty by the dangerous allurements of this enchanting beauty. He therefore obstinately, though reluctantly, forbid her approach; and denied himself the pleasure he might have taken in beholding her.

His own honour, however, and the respect due to the quality and accomplishments of the lady, demanded all possible attention and precaution in her behalf. For this purpose, he summoned his chief captains and favourites. He asked, which of them would adventure to take the charge of this young beauty; and he promised the highest rewards to those who should honourably discharge their trust, but threatened his deepest displeasure to any who should betray it.

All of them shrunk at the apprehension of taking upon them the personal custody and care of a beauty, whom their great and virtuous monarch had not even dared to look upon; and no one had offered to undertake this perilous commission, till a valiant and noble youth, named Araspes, stood forth.

From my infancy, O Cyrus, said the graceful adventurer, I have been educated in the school, and brought up at the feet of the divine Zoroaster. I am accustomed, from my childhood, to combat, conquer, and scorn all sensual seducers. I hold virtue in mine eye, as its only object; my heart esteems and affects it as my only good; the nature thereof is become one with my nature; and I do not remember the time wherein I have been tempt-
ed

ed to deviate from rectitude, or sink beneath the calls of honour. I cannot therefore but smile at the fear of my companions. Their courage at a breach or in the field is unquestionable. I have seen them face a thousand deaths ; I have seen them rush into dangers ; and yet they dread the sight of a single and weakly female. For me she can have no terrors, since I am out of the power and reach of her allurements. I will undertake the charge of this formidable creature, at the risque of my honour, at the risque of my life, and more than all, at the risque of the favour of Cyrus.

Cyrus had long loved the person, and contemplated and admired the virtues of this youth. He therefore, with joy and confidence, committed the precious deposit to his trust ; in full assurance that the person and honour of Panthea could no where be so safe as in the protection of Araspes.

The young hero had in reality all the virtues that he boasted. His education under so beloved and respectable a master ; his early and long habit of opposing and rejecting the smallest incitement to vice ; and the delights which he was accustomed to feel in the sentiments and practice of what his judgment approved ; had in a manner so wholly lulled his naughty self to sleep, that he did not so much as dream that he had an enemy within him.

This, my Harry, was his heavy misfortune, and the sad occasion of his fall. For, not knowing that his evil Esau was still alive in his bosom ; not knowing that he had any one to oppose or to struggle with ; he kept neither watch nor guard, and so lay naked and open to the mischief that came upon him, as I am going to tell you.

On his seeing the lady who was committed to his trust, he felt no emotion nor sentiment save that of wonder, as in beholding the most perfect of the works of his Creator ; and he took a pleasure in providing that she should be treated and accommodated

dated with all possible attention and respect, as due to so accomplished and pre-minent a being.

As the nature of his commission gave him frequent occasions of being near and about the person of his amiable ward, new beauties grew daily visible and open to his eyes. But, above all, in conversing with her, the music of her accents, and the elegance of her sentiments fell insensibly on his soul, that drank them up as a dry ground drinks up the invisible dew of the evening.

His occasions for attending her, and doing little offices and services about her, now daily increased without seeming to do so. When he was called, and intended to go elsewhere, his feet imperceptibly carried him to the presence of Panthea. His slumbers were short, uneasy, and broken; and at meals, he knew not whether or on what he fed.

At length his eyes opened to the calamity of his condition. But at the moment wherein he perceived his love, he found himself too far gone for the possibility of a return. He was as a mariner who had haled his boat upon land; and thinking himself secure, had fallen asleep therein; but while he slept, a spring-tide came silently on, and covered the shore, and gained upon the beach, and swelled under the boat, and heaved it from land, and turning, bore it farther and farther to sea. Then awakened the helpless mariner, unprovided of sail or oar, or of any means to effect or attempt a return. He saw his lost estate; he stretched his arms towards the land; but while he reached it with his eyes, he found himself carried, by an irresistible power, still more and more distant from the sight.

Thus fared it with the wretched, lost, fallen away Araspes. He awakened to his condition, he looked around, but found himself helpless. He would have struggled; he wished his return to virtue; but his wishes were sickly, as feeble as a

dream; and he felt himself borne away, by a secret and subtile force, from that honour of which he now barely retained a distant prospect.

The imbosomed fire that preyed upon him, at length became insufferable, and he desperately determined to seek relief. He threw himself at the feet of the object of his desires, avowed the ardour of his passion, and besought her pity.

The princess replied, in a mild but resolute accent, I do pity you, Araspes; I pity you the more, as it is all that my power can ever do for you. Two insurmountable barriers oppose your desires; the one is my honour, the other my inclination: I am already married to a young hero, the prince and patron of his people, the most accomplished of his sex, and an honour to human nature; he is my first and last love, he possesses my heart wholly; but were it emptied of him, it would not be emptied of its virtue; and the thoughts of any other would be an offence to my soul. Be advised then, Araspes, depart from temptation, and seek in absence, a cure for the indiscretion of your love.

Confused, astonished, speechless, Araspes lost, at once, the little that remained to him of virtue and reason. He knew not what he did, he would have proceeded to violence; when the Princess suddenly drew a poniard, and pointed it at her bosom: whereat Araspes straight withdrew, overwhelmed with shame, disappointment, and despair.

As soon as he had retired, the Princess took a little tablet, whereon she inscribed the following words.

TO CYRUS.

“Your Favourite has betrayed his trust; he
“ would

“ would have offered violence. Think what is
 “ due to your own honour, as well as that of
 PANTHEA.”

This she dispatched to the Monarch by one of her faithful mutes.—As soon as Cyrus had perused it, he sighed, and dropt a tear, as over the departed virtue of his best beloved friend.—He instantly sent for Araspes. Araspes durst not disobey. He came, indeed, but then he did not dare to look upward.

After a silence on both sides—Cyrus cried out, Whoever thou art, account to me for my friend, account to me for his virtue! a virtue that I deemed to be impassible, unassailable. Whereupon Araspes made the following most memorable of answers.

As you are but lately entered on your Greek, my Harry, I will first read the passage to you, and then give you the sense of it, word for word.

Δυο, ω Κυρε, σαφως εχω ψυχας. Ου γαρ δη μια γε εσται, αμα αγαθη τε εστι και κακη, εδ αμα καλων τε και αισ χρων εργων ορα, και ταυτα αμα βυλεται τε και ου βυλεται πραττειν. Αλλα δηλον οτι δυο εσιν ψυχα, και οταν μεν η αγαθη χεσται, πα καλα πραττεται, οταν δε η πονηρα, σα αισχρα επιχαρειται.

“ O Cyrus, it is manifest that I have two souls;
 “ for, if I had but one soul, it could not be, at
 “ once, both good and evil; not a lover, at the
 “ same time, of what is honest and dishonest; it
 “ could not, at once, desire and be averse to the
 “ same thing. It is, therefore, most evident that
 “ we have two souls; and when the good soul hath
 “ the dominion, good works are performed; but
 “ evil works, when the evil soul predominates.”

Here Harry, you see there were two men in one man, which is the same thing as there being two boys in you. For the soul is the man, Harry; and the body is but as a sign, to give notice to others, that such a man dwells within.

But

But Sir, says Harry, since, as you say and as I find, I have two different boys or souls within me; pray, how came they to be different? did the same God that desired to make the one soul good, desire also to make the other soul evil.

Your question, my darling, is very proper, though very deep. I will however endeavour, to the best of my power, to accommodate my answers to the weakness of your capacity.

God, who is nothing but goodness, cannot possibly desire any kind of evil; and therefore cannot be, immediately, the author thereof. But he can make or create such poor little insignificant beings, as you and I are, Harry; though all that God himself can do in our behalf, cannot possibly make us good, or excellent, or perfect, any otherwise than by informing us with his own goodness and perfections.

This would lead me, my love, to the unfolding that capital secret, of which you are not yet susceptible; a secret, upon which this world, sun, moon, and stars, with all the worlds upon worlds that lie beyond them, depend and hang, as your hat would hang upon yonder nail.

The Angels that are now in Heaven are great, good, perfect, and glorious beings; because they are filled with the greatness, goodness, glory, and perfection of God. For they know that of themselves, they are nothing; and that in themselves, they are no other than empty and dark creatures, mere sensible capacities prepared for the reception, the feeling, and enjoyment of the light, virtue, and blessedness of their bountiful Creator.

How the spirit of man came to be, in itself, so much worse than an empty and dark creature; how it came to be filled and polluted with all manner of evil, with selfishness, pride, covetousness, abominable lusts, envy, hatred, malice, revengefulness, and wrathfulness; how it further came to have a
different

different spirit begotten within it, informing its heart and turning the chords thereof to sentiments of humility, charity, purity, love, patience, and peace—this, Harry, is the great secret, of which you are not yet capable; the secret, as I told you, whereon the world now hangs, whereby it has been changed, and whereby it will be renewed.

In the mean time, let it suffice for you, to feel and to know, that your dark spirit so filled, as I said, with evil, is yourself, my Harry, is all that you have of the creature within you; and that the good spirit, which is begotten within your evil spirit, is breathed into you by the power and Spirit of God himself, in order to oppose and conquer the evil, and enlighten the darkness, and purify the foulness of your selfish or creaturely spirit; that you may finally become as the angels that are in Heaven, filled with the purity, glory, and blessedness of your God.

Know, therefore, from henceforward, and let the sense of it sink into your soul, my darling, that all the evil which is in you, belongs to yourself; and that all the good which is in you, belongs to your God: that you cannot, in or of yourself, so much as think a good thought, or form a good wish, or oppose a single temptation or evil motion within you. From hence learn to be humble, and to think meanly of yourself, and not ascribe to yourself any kind of goodness or virtue; for that would be sacrilege; it would be to rob God of his peculiar property of goodness. From hence further learn, never to prefer yourself to others, or to think better of yourself than of any one living; for, so far as you are a creature, no one can be viler or faultier than you are; however God may be pleased, through his mercy and bounty to you, to be better in you than in others.

Never exalt yourself, my Harry; neither in company nor conversation, of any kind, say I did
this

THE FOOL OF QUALITY.

this or I did that, or I said this or I said that; for, in exalting yourself, you exalt your own proud and evil spirit above the good and meek spirit of God that is in you. Let all praise mortify and be a reproach to your conscience; but take blame with patience and pleasure; in so doing you will approve yourself a lover of justice, as well as a lover of your own reformation.

Lastly, my love, turn your whole will and affections, from your own evil spirit, to the spirit of God that is in you; for that is the utmost that any man can do toward his own salvation. Reject, spurn, and detest every motion to evil; embrace, cherish, and take to your heart, every motion of good; you will thereby acquire the never ending glory of having joined with God, in the combat and conquest that he is desirous of obtaining over all the guilt, uncleanness, and depravity into which your nature is fallen.

Here, Andrew came up with notice to his master, that the Earl of Mansfield was below, and requested to speak with him. At this Harry coloured up, and cried, Did not I tell you, Sir, what trouble I should bring upon you? Do not be alarmed, my dear, says Mr. Fenton; do you stay here. If there is a necessity for your appearance, I will send you word.

The father of young Lord Bottom was in every respect, the reverse of his son. He had come on foot, without attendants, was dressed in a plain napped coat, and had the mein and appearance of an honest country-grazier.

My lord, says Mr. Fenton, I should think myself greatly honoured by this visit, if I was not so much concerned at the occasion of it. I am truly grieved that my son should have done such great offence to young Lord Bottom. Sir, says the earl, I find you have quite mistaken the intent of my visit: I am come to thank your son for the just
and

and noble lesson which he gave to mine : and which he has so forcibly impressed upon his memory, as will not, I trust, permit him to forget it in a hurry. My lord, replied Mr. Fenton, my little fellow is very sensible of his misbehaviour in this business. He was the first to chide himself ; and he told me the story, very much, I assure your lordship, to his own disadvantage.

Mr. Fenton, rejoined the earl, after what I have heard of your boy, from one Jack Freeman, a very faithful and intelligent servant of mine, I am quite impatient to see him, and there is nothing generous which I am not willing to believe concerning him. My wife, indeed, is not, at all times, in my way of thinking. She has taken her young lord with her to town, to the doctor's ; and I am concerned at the violence of the resentment which she expressed on this occasion, as it may be a means of deferring that acquaintance and intimacy which I heartily wish to cultivate with the family of Mr. Fenton. But where is this wonderful boy ? I request to see him.

Harry, hereupon, was immediately called down. As he apprehended that he was sent for to be severely chidden, a little resentful haughtiness arose in his mind, and strengthened it against the violence of the reproofs that he expected. He therefore entered with an air that no way favoured of mortification, and made but a cold though solemn bow to the earl.

Bless me, exclaimed my lord, what a striking resemblance ! I never saw two faces or persons so much alike. There is no difference, Mr. Fenton, between you and your son, except what age has made. Mr. Fenton smiled, and my lord continued. I always had a notion that your heroes were huge fellows ; but here I think we have got heroism quite in miniature. Can this be the one, who, as I am told, with a trip or a blow, overthrows
and

and demolishes all before him? Come to me, my dear, and give me leave to salute you.

Harry respectfully approached; and my lord taking him in his arms, and warmly kissing him, said, I thank you, my little man, for the generous lesson which you gave to my very naughty boy; and for the deference which you taught him to make, for the future, between the sauciness of a Lord and the sentiments of a Gentleman.

Harry felt himself, at once, disconcerted, abased, and wholly cut down, by this compliment from his lordship. At length, recovering himself, he answered; You mean, to be sure, Sir, to reprove me the more by what you have said; but if you are in earnest, I am sure it is a very bad lesson which you teach me, Sir, when you praise me for my faults, and so encourage me in them. Faults! my dear, cried the earl, I heard of none such; what do you mean by your faults? I mean, Sir, that when I told your son as much as that he was not a gentleman, it shewed that I was still less of the gentleman myself; and I very well deserved the blow which he gave me for such an affront; and I am ready to ask his pardon whenever you please, my lord. No, no, my man, cried Lord Mansfield, you shall never disgrace yourself so much as to make any submissions to my naughty boy. I shall think it no disgrace, quick and affectingly replied Harry, to make submissions to any one who is son to such a gentleman as my Lord Mansfield.

My lord, for some time, looked with astonishment at the child; when, eagerly catching and pressing him to his bosom, he cried out, On my soul, you are the sweetest as well as the noblest fellow I was ever acquainted with; and Sir, I shall think it an honour to be admitted among your friends; and that's what I would not say to many in Old England. Mr. Fenton, continued the earl, if you will give yourself the trouble to enquire out
my

my little lodge on the hill, you will oblige me; though I envy your character, I shall be glad of your acquaintance. So saying, Lord Mansfield got up, after his blunt manner, and precipitately withdrew.

On the following evening, Mr. Fenton took Harry and Mr. Clement into his study; and taking from his pocket book a number of Bank-bills, Mr. Clement, says he, I here make my Harry a present of fifteen hundred pounds, reserving only to myself the privilege of advising how it may be laid out and secured for him to the best advantage.

To-morrow morning you and he are to set out on foot for London, and there to take lodgings as near to the Fleet-prison as you can conveniently be accommodated. You are then to apply to the keeper, and to give him a gratuity for making out a written list of all the prisoners under his custody, with their quality and condition annexed, as also the sums respectively due, and the terms during which they have been in confinement.

You are then to enquire from him the several characters, distresses, and merits of all the prisoners of note, and to make an entry thereof in a separate paper; but then you are not to depend altogether on his report. You are to go from room to room, to converse with the prisoners apart, and to enquire from each the characters, fortunes, and disasters of the others.

This inquisition, in all likelihood, will take you up above a fortnight. But above all, remember that those among them, who are most affected by the distresses of their fellows, ought to be the principal objects of your own charity and relief.

Let five hundred pounds of this money be appropriated to the enlargement of such prisoners as are under dures for sums not amounting to ten pounds. You will thereby free the captive; give means of bread to the hungry; and restore to your country

country many members that are worse than useless, that are also a dead weight and incumbrance upon her. Let the remaining thousand pounds be applied to the enfranchisement or relief of those prisoners of note, whose case and calamities call for singular compassion. And be sure to keep an account, where your money may fall short of such valuable purposes; and as far as five hundred pounds more will reach, we will supply the defect.

Hereupon Harry caught his patron about the neck, and repeatedly kissing him, cried, O dada, how happy, how very happy you make me! O, that we had money enough to employ every fortnight the year round, like this sweet fortnight.

The very next morning our travellers set out on their generous expedition. But we forbear to say any thing relative thereto, till their return; as they themselves are the best qualified, and, in truth, have the best right to give the particulars of their own extraordinary adventures.

Our Harry and his friend Clement had not been gone above an hour, when Mr. Fenton received a card from the Countess of Maitland, requesting his company to coffee in the evening. She was widow to the late Earl, a very lovely woman, had taken the most sumptuous house on the hill, and was resorted to by numbers of the first figure, from among whom she was perfectly qualified to make a selection, exceedingly entertaining to herself, of the sensible, the elegant, and the ludicrous.

Mr. Fenton attended my lady precisely at the time appointed. When he entered, she was writing a note at her desk. On turning her eye to the door, she was suddenly struck with the grace of his figure, the sweetness of his aspect, and the ease of his deportment. She was further struck with a recollection as of something very interesting, but which had happened at a vast distance, or of which she had dreamed. Her heart was affected; she coloured

loured up, and again turned pale, without being yet able to move from her chair. At length, recovering, and rising, and advancing toward him, Mr. Fenton, says she, this is a very singular favour, a favour for which I have long wished. This Sir, you know, is my third time of asking, but my two former cards were not so happy as to bring you. Madam, said he carelessly, I am but a very poor visitor; however, I could not refuse myself the honour of attending your ladyship's summons, at least for once. I have been now, said the Countess, three months on the hill. Within that time I have applied to all my acquaintance, in order to get some of them to introduce me to you; but none of them were so fortunate as to know your name. To be known, madam, replied Mr. Fenton, a person must have been, in some way, considerable; indeed it is no way disagreeable to my own inclinations to pass the short remnant of an insignificant life, as little noticed as possible. I have been just writing a note, Sir, says my lady; be so good as amuse yourself for a moment with the books and paintings in my closet there, and I will attend you.

Within a few minutes after Mr. Fenton had withdrawn, Mr. Sneer entered. What, cried he, bowing, all alone, Lady Maitland? that's surprising. Your sex, it seems, are grown very careless of improvement, when they neglect the model by which they should polish their manners. O you wretch, exclaimed the Countess, what brought you here of all things? I have a world of company to be with me this evening; and if they get but a hint of your coming, I shall be left as much alone as the statue in Bushy-Park. La madam, cries Mr. Sneer, is it possible that with all your discernment you should be so much mistaken? Permit me to assure your ladyship, that I am plagued out of my life, by the solicitations of numbers of the first

first quality for my company. You, you brute, cried my lady, your company courted! it must be by Indians then, who have a reason of their own for worshipping the devil: why you make no more of characters, than a reaper does of grass, when he is cutting down weeds. O, madam, exclaimed Mr. Sneer, they like me never the worse for that; every one gladly compounds for the maiming of their own character, to have the pleasure of seeing those of their neighbours hewn down. But pray, madam, what company do you expect this evening? Why there is Colonel Sweetpowder. Colonel Sweetpowder of all things! Yes, Sir, and a very fine gentleman too, in my opinion. Why, madam, the man would not want sense, it is true, if he had not wholly mistaken the manners of his profession. He has been, as I am told, in some trifling engagements, but never had the rudeness to attack his enemy, without white gloves. He had like to have lost his life, upon a retreat, by the delay which he made in search of his sword-knot.

Here a footman entered, saying, Colonel Sweetpowder, my lady.—Lady Maitland, says the Colonel, your truly most devoted. More your's than you are any one's, Mr. Sneer; you are extremely happy, Sir, in your *tete a tete* with her ladyship; but people have not always the choice of their company. Severe, Colonel, very severe upon my honour says Mr. Sneer. He who wars on the world, replies the Colonel, should not hope to escape without a scratch, Mr. Sneer; and I have faults enough to make me angry with all who are censorious. Colonel, said the Countess, Mr. Sneer has been railing at me through fifty families, and is but just come to assist me to rail at my neighbours. On my soul, madam, says Mr. Sneer, I am resolved not to spare the least of your failings, when I am once so ingenious as to discover where they lie. Your justice, Mr. Sneer, to the merits of
this

this lady, exclaimed the Colonel, entitles you to say what you will against the rest of womankind.

Mr. Fenton just then re-entering, the Countess introduced him to her acquaintance. I hope in heaven, madam, cried Mr. Sneer, that the company whom you expect may be wholly the reverse of this gentleman's appearance! The mouth of raillery must else learn the language of admiration; and that would be an exchange by no means suitable to my taste. Mr. Fenton bowed, but was silent.

Here was rap, rap, rap, rap; and immediately Lady Cribbage's chariot was announced. There now, cries Mr. Sneer, there is the happiest woman in the universe, that's certain. She divides her whole time between the two delights of her life. CARDS and SCANDAL. She is never tired of either, and yet runs from one to the other, that variety may give the higher relish to both.

Lady Cribbage here entered, in all the hurry imaginable. She flew and embraced the Countess with transport. My dear, dearest Lady Maitland, says she, how happy am I to have got to you at last! Heavens, what have I endured before I could get free of that odious London? What a gaunt-lope have I run! a hundred and fifty visits, no less upon rep: and through such a sortment too, as your mercers say! But there is no dispensing with these fopperies; they had all dropt cards at my gate; and I couldn't but return the visit, in good manners to myself, you know. There was Lady Gadabout, and Mrs. Chataway, and Mrs. Tenderfides, and Lady Frump, and Lady Dowager Gossipper, and Miss Giglet, the merry miss of threescore, that you know. La madam, exclaimed the Countess, why, these are all persons of distinguished fashion. Ay ay, my dear friend, replied lady Cribbage, they are the noughts of the great world; when such as Lady Maitland are pleased to figure
before

before them, they acquire a kind of value; they would not otherwise be picked up should they drop on the highway.—Colonel Sweetpowder, ten thousand pardons! I really did not observe you.—Your servant, Sir,—a fine person! (half whispering to lady Maitland)—And you here, Mr. Sneer! you are the man of the world to whom we should pay our first respects, if we desire that our caps should sit straight, you know.

Why, my lady, says Mr. Sneer, would you be like the Turk, and allow no brother slanderer near your throne? but the field of folly and ridicule is wide enough for us both. Besides, madam, we assail in very different manners; I am like the Parthian, no more than a back stroke and away; but your ladyship moves on like time or death, and mows down your sex without distinction before you. O fye, Mr. Sneer, said lady Cribbage! What say you, Sir, can you think so hardly of me? No truly, madam, answered Mr. Fenton; I am rather inclined to believe that you only prune; for I have often observed that, after very keen hands, reputation sprouts anew, and flourishes the better. O lady Cribbage, lady Cribbage, exclaimed Mr. Sneer, that's the severest thing, upon my honour, that has been said this day. What, allow a lady the will to do mischief, and not allow her the power! can any thing be so provoking? Well, supposing it be so, rejoined lady Cribbage, I would rather be cut by that gentleman's razor than Mr. Sneer's hatchet. But apropos, I wonder what keeps lady Philligree! I met her on my last visit, and she told me she had but half a dozen more to pay and be with us; she brings with her a new language for the day, I'll engage. That woman, says Mr. Sneer, ought to be strung up for minting our English dialect. True, added the colonel, if her coin would pass.

Come,

Come, dearest lady Maitland, cried lady Cribbage, while we choice spirits are got together, let us know what company you have summoned for the evening. I hope in goodness you have laid in a sufficient fund for merriment. I should droop to death, if the propriety of their manners left no room for laughter. Fear not, said the Countess; but mark the characters as they pass.

First, there is Sir Bumkin Toilette. Most excellent, exclaimed lady Cribbage: the amphibious wretch! he that is so like an otter, between his country breeding that he can't get rid of, and his court breeding that he can't assume.

Again, there is Lord Bottom, earl of Mansfield, lately come to the hill. Ay, added the colonel, there is the sample that nature gave us when she intended to shew what man ought to be. He! the bear, cries Sneer; for heaven's sake, colonel, how can you praise a man whose manners are so wholly the reverse of your own? I allow that he has talents and learning, though he seems to know nothing about the matter; and he piques himself, solely, on the most plebeian of all virtues, that of being an HONEST MAN. Do you know him, Mr. Fenton? Just enough, Sir, said Mr. Fenton, to make me fear that I should rather afford matter of ridicule to his lordship, than hope to be merry at his expence. I have been told, said Sneer, that on his return from his travels, he was an accomplished cavalier, but he suddenly took a disgust to all manner of politeness; and I question at this moment, if there be five men in England to whom he would say, your servant! And I am confident, added the colonel, that there are not five men in England whom he would not serve.

Talk not of him, dear Colonel, exclaimed lady Cribbage; he says more shocking things, in fewer and simpler words, than any Cynic that ever breathed. Because, madam, rejoined the colonel, he is too much our friend to hurt us by flattery,
and

and he never reproves but with an intention to reform. Well, well, cried Sneer, I own there is not much matter for laughter in his character. Let us call another cause, Who comes next, lady Maitland?

The widow Mawkin, says the Countess, the huge Kentish fortune. She who keeps three marriageable daughters in the nursery, for fear people should be so impertinent as to enquire who brought them into the world. She is not yet in despair of a third jointure. And she would bribe others, by her smiles, to be as forgetful of her age as she is herself. I never see her, cries lady Cribbage, but she puts me in mind of a May morning, when the long pole is awkwardly hung with flowers and garlands. She has been equally happy, adds Mr. Sneer, in adorning her mind with the flowers of science; and is as ridiculously affected in the parade of her learning as she is of her dress. I could pity or pardon all this, says the Colonel, if she were not so merciless in her censures on an article of female virtue, to a single breach of which no man living will ever lead Mrs. Mawkin into temptation. But have you any more blocks, madam, for the hewing out of your Mercuries?

Yes, yes, said the Countess, there's enough to laugh with, and enough to laugh at, I warrant you. There's our friend Billy Buffle. O lud! screamed lady Cribbage, I wish I had brought another gown; this is he who is always so busy where there's nothing to do; he is full of his friendships, that you never can escape without some damage; and he spoils you a suit of brocade, in his hurry to reach you your coffee.

Then says the Countess, there's Miss Trinket. O the pretty bauble! cries Mr. Sneer, whoever marries her will have something to hang to his watch. Does she bring up the rear of your visitants, lady Maitland?

No,

No, said the Countess, we have lady Homespun, with an et cetera of no characters, yet to come—Homespun! exclaimed lady Cribbage; upon my word, the best sort of a gammer of quality that I know. The good woman would really be sensible company, if she was not so utterly void of education. Could you think how the poor creature exposed her ignorance t'other day? she popped in where I was engaged at four handed cribbage. Having peer'd over the game with vast sagacity, What, says she, I think your ladyship has got to your old game of quadrille. Ha, ha, ha! Lady Homespun, I fancy, is one of those who think of getting into a fashion, exactly at the period that others have got out.

Madam, said the Countess, if lady Homespun had time to spare, from the duties of religion and a life of benevolence, she would undoubtedly employ it in studying matters more suitable to your ladyship's taste. Her piccadillos, however, are pardonable on account of her pleasantry; for while she laughs, with great justice, at the follies of high life; she laughs at herself also, with great good humour, for being so sensibly out of the fashion.

Here again was a loud rapping; and the peals were repeated with little intermission, till all the company arrived. They succeeded so quickly, that lady Maitland had scarce time to receive each of them with a distinction and manner of address, that she judged most agreeable to their humours and characters.

In the first place, Mrs. Philligree rushed in and cried, Lady Maitland, I am most superlatively your's. I am your's, madam, said the Countess, positively, beyond all comparison. Such a stranger as Miss Trinket! you have enquired the way at last then. I felicitate you miss, on your new acquisition. I am told that your green monkey is absolutely the greatest beau, and the greatest wit,

within the purlieus of St. James!—Sir Bumkin Toilette, how happy you make us! I hear you have got rid of all your vile country incumbrances of huge houses and dirty acres, and that the court may now hope to have you all to itself. Mrs. Mawkin! you put us under a thousand alarms; we were afraid we shou'dn't have you. Dear madam, how extremely rich and elegant is all this! and how condescending, in a lady of your taste, to appear to owe any thing to dress and outward ornament—O, Mr. Buffle, thrice welcome! our sex may now boast of having a servant. For, these other men creatures are so listless, or so aukward, as not to merit a curtsy in the way of wages.—My lord Mansfield, this is more than an honour, it is a benefit. If some of us are not improved before you leave us, I shall, for my own part, take great blame to myself—My dear lady Homespun! how are the sweet babies? how are your obliging domestics, how are all your cats and dogs? believe me, I take an interest in the harmony and good humour of every thing about you. I think, said lady Homespun, they all begin to droop, since your ladyship has ceased to make them happy by your presence.

The earl of Mansfield, looking about, perceived Mr. Fenton, turned precipitately to him, and catching him in his arms, Mr. Fenton, he cried, how glad am I to meet you! what an advantage I shall esteem it at all times, and in all places! how is my Harry, my little hero? Mr. Fenton bowed twice.

Here, William, said the Countess, tea and coffee! and order the tables and cards to be laid in the next room. Lord Mansfield, what news? you are an intimate of all the foreign cabinets.

Our domestic news, answered the earl, is by far the most extraordinary. It is affirmed, that our freeholders, throughout the shires and boroughs of
England,

England, have entered into a resolution against bribery and corruption.

Our parliament also have this moment, in agitation, an act for establishing the two virtues of PROBITY and CHASTITY, respectively, among the sexes. To this act they further propose to add several clauses, in the nature of a codicil annexed to a will. Among others, it is intended to make a general exchange of the forms of good manners, for the offices of good nature; and all acts of benevolence are hereafter to pass by an immutable law, for proofs of high breeding.

It is further to be enacted, that every courtier or great man may be sued upon his promise; or even on such intimations of nods, smiles, or whispers, or squeezes by the hand, as may credibly be supposed to keep people in expectation. No advantage is to be taken of ignorance by any trader, nor of innocence in the commerce between the sexes. The glow of modesty is the only rouge that will be allowed to any fair face of quality, in these his majesty's dominions.

No person of any station will hereafter be permitted to go abroad in search of faults, till they can find none at home by the help of a candle. And lastly, all slander is to be accounted petty-treason: forasmuch as it has been intimated, somehow or other, that the loss of a good name is more deplorable in its consequences, than the loss of any other property, or even of life.

Hey day! exclaims the countess, at this rate we shall have lady Homespun at the very tip top of the mode.—Ay, says Miss Trinket; but what will become of your ladyship, who are now accounted the pattern all elegance and politeness? O miss, cried the colonel, lady Maitland will do well enough: she has only to drop a few articles that are superfluous to her good sense and her good nature. She will

will thereby, as I take it, be only undressed, and happily restored to all her native loveliness.

Dem'me, exclaims Sir Bumkin, if matters come to this pass, I shall have made a fine kettle of fish on't, shan't I? to throw away so many thousands of pounds, with an immensity of time and pains on delicacy, and taste, and virtue, and the beau-monde, and all that—What, cries Mrs. Mawkin, are our parliament beside themselves? Here has the world been growing up, these six thousand years, to its grand climacteric of courtly accomplishments; and now they would overthrow the whole building, and mix us of the pinnacle with the dust of the vulgar. If we of high life are to be laid under restraints, with cits and villagers, what advantage will fortune give us? it will no longer be of any use to its owners.—This is preposterously, cried Mrs. Philligree, the most laughable scheme that ever was conceiveable on this side the tropic. Our parliament would affect to be an heteroclite to all other parliaments. But the best on't is, that their power is immensely too little for the greatness of the immensity of their undertaking. Pardon me, madam, replied the colonel, I know of nothing beyond the ability of our parliament. In spirituals alike as temporals, their power is the same in England as that of the Pope is at Rome; they can bind or loose, at pleasure, in Heaven as on earth. Beside, madam, adds Sneer, with respect to our parliament, this is very far from being a laughable scheme; I rather hold it to be both loveable and laudable. They must thereby forego no considerable advantages on their own part. They will no longer be interested in the prostitution of their constituents, or the sale of their country. They have it even in contemplation to decline their capital privilege of maintaining their families at the expence of their neighbours; and propose for the future, to pay their debts.—I hope, my lord, says Mr.

Mr. Bustle, your new laws are not to be put in force against the offices of friendship and civil manners. No, Sir, says lord Mansfield, only against the parade of them.

Here Mr. Bustle observed that the coffee was filled out, and rose with precipitation to help the ladies.—Away, you wretch, keep from me a mile! screamed out lady Cribbage. No nearer, dear Sir, no nearer I beseech you, exclaimed Mrs. Philligree and Miss Trinket.—Mr. Bustle, says lord Mansfield, I would advise you, to tender your services to lady Maitland and lady Homespun; if you happen to spill your coffee on their clothes, you will oblige them with an apology for giving them away to the first poor body.—I wish, my lord, says lady Cribbage, that you knew how to compliment some with less expence to others. But apropos, my lord, these same compassionate acts against slander, and going from home in search of faults, as you phrase it; have they yet passed into a law?—They have not, madam.—O, then we may take goodman Time by the forelock. Pray, ladies, have you heard any thing lately of the two Miss Worthy's?—Nothing new, answered the Countess, nothing more than that they are both very good and very amiable.—Poor orphans! says lady Cribbage, they are greatly to be pitied. The eldest has preferred an intrigue with her guardian's footman to the honourable addresses of Mr. Melvin, and is retired for a month or so to her aunt in the country. While her sister, on the other hand, preferred lawful marriage with the butler to a settlement of a thousand a year from his grace of A——. Miss Worthy, said the colonel, is certainly gone to her aunt's, as your ladyship intimated; for Mr. Melvin and I are to be with her in a few days, by her own appointment: and I can vouch, that her sister has married the butler your ladyship mentions, for he is a very particular friend.

friend of mine ; a young gentleman of great merit, family, and fortune, who assumed that disguise, like a hero in romance, in order to gain the nearer access to his princess.

For shame, gentlemen, says lord Mansfield, no more of your vindications, I beseech ye. Perhaps there is not a single person present, who is not at this moment a subject of raillery, mayhap of calumny, to some other tea-table. Let us also take up the racket and return the ball of scandal. Indeed, I know few people of whom any good can be said ; and none who may not be censured, without offence to truth. Beside, as evil is now spoken so universally of every body, no one is hurt thereby. If any, in particular, should escape detraction, it might justly be suspected that they had no one quality that deserved to be envied.

O fye, my lord, cried lady Cribbage, how can you think so uncharitably of people ? there are many of my acquaintance who have really valuable qualities. 'Tis true, there is lady Gamelove, and Mrs. Situp, and Miss Freak, and a hundred others, whose heads will fit the cap of scandal, turn it which way you will. But then there is Mrs. Orderly, and Miss Neighbourly, and a few others, whose reputations remain almost quite unsullied. If Mrs. Orderly has faults, she however has the discretion to keep them from view. Miss Neighbourly, indeed, does not set up for a beauty ; she knows she will have nothing to repent of for any murders committed by her pinking eyes ; but then she is the best tempered and pleasantest body breathing ; she never fails to excite merriment wherever she comes ; 'tis a pity it should ever happen at her own expence.

If I didn't fear to be tedious, said lady Homespun, I could give you a recent story that affected me extremely. The company instantly urged her to

to gratify their curiosity, and she began as follows:

Some weeks ago, I sent to the servants office to enquire for a female of some education, who might assist me in the instruction of my little girls. The day following a young woman came to be hired. Her appearance was most bespeaking; and with a countenance expressive of every virtue, she looked a renunciation of the smallest title thereto.

I asked for her character; but she answered, with an air of the deepest humiliation, that she had never been at service; that she was an unfortunate stranger who deserved no one's good word; and that she had nothing to ask, but my acceptance of her labour, and the shelter of my roof.

I had not the heart to reject her; and, on trial, I found that she was mistress of the polite languages, and of every female accomplishment, though she did not seem to have reached her two and twentieth year.

She grew extremely fond of my children. She used to look with a melancholy kind of pleasure upon them; and frequently, during the times of her dressing or instructing them, I observed her tears striving to steal away unnoticed.

This, with the thousand elegancies that accompanied her words and actions, made me impatient to know whence and who she was. She perceived my curiosity; and with a beseeching and mortified air, Ah madam! said she, seek not to hate me; seek not to know the story of my shame, since it cannot be told without reflecting discredit on persons of worth and honour.

The day after, Sir Hanmer Homespun came in, where Peggy, for so she called herself, was chatting with my little girls at the further end of the room. I am come, my dear, said he, from a visit to Mr. Grace, the new acquaintance in whose praise you heard me speak so largely. I enquired out

out his house, and went up without ceremony. As I entered his chamber, I was struck with a new and very affecting object. He sat opposite to a pier glass, wherein I observed him, unnoticed; and on each knee he held an infant, over whom he wept plentifully, while he caressed them, in turns, and tenderly pressed them to his bosom.

At length he perceived me, and rose in confusion. You have caught me, Sir Hammer, said he, lamenting the loss of a false woman, whom yet I cannot cease to love, and whose fault has not been able to abate my fondness for these her innocent offspring. The misguided wretch, while I was lately in the country, eloped with lord Riot from her own honour and happiness. Lord Riot has since paid his trespass with his life; but what is become of my Peggy I know not. Can I depend on your goodness to enquire her out? 'tis a pity that one so lovely should be utterly lost. Here is a bill for 500*l.* dispose of it, my friend, as you think best for her advantage, and let not her necessities plunge her deeper in guilt.

Here the children shrieked out, and cried that Peggy was dead, their Peggy was dead! We instantly ran to them, and found her in a fit, in which she continued several hours without sign of life. As soon as she opened her eyes, she turned them languidly upon me. Ah madam! said she, you know me now. I am faulty indeed, but much more unfortunate. And as you were lately desirous to hear my story, you shall have it without extenuation or disguise.

I am daughter to a poor farmer, who was tenant to the father of Mr. Grace. When I was about nine years old, the young gentleman, who was lately returned from the college, happened to be out a sporting, and called in at my father's. I considered him as a species quite different from all I had seen of man. His presence gave me a
pleasure

pleasure till then unfelt, and his parting was as the loss of something extremely dear.

From that time he chose our part of the country for the scene of his diversions, and his visits became longer and more frequent. He never failed to bring me some little present, and I betrayed my affection by many artless testimonies.

In about three years, old Mr. Grace died. My father got, no one knew how, into plentiful circumstances, and sent me to a boarding-school, where I was carefully educated in all the becoming matters of which I was capable.

I now began to apprehend from whom my advantages flowed; and my young heart was penetrated with the most lively and affecting gratitude. I grew more reserved, however, as my sentiments grew more ardent; and whenever my benefactor came to visit me, we appeared under a mutual restraint from the suppression of passions, which I thought it indecent and he unseasonable, to express.

When I arrived at the age of sixteen years, Mr. Grace publicly addressed me for marriage. Can you think it, madam, that while my heart embraced the overture with the warmest transport; it was yet with the strongest reluctance, that I yielded to a happiness which I deemed so injurious to the honour and interest of him, whom I loved as I loved my own soul.

Five years, the happiest sure that ever were passed upon earth, I lived blessing and blessed by my heart's chosen master, and bore him three lovely resemblances of the image that was always present to my soul.

One night Mr. Grace, returning later than usual, brought home a wounded gentleman, but entered as privately as possible, for fear of alarming me. This gentleman was lord Riot, whose life Mr. Grace had saved, at the peril of his own,

from the resentment of an injured husband, who had set upon him with advantage.

As it was feared that his wounds were mortal, the surgeons advised that he should not be removed, and he lay six weeks at our house; where, induced by hospitality and the desire of my husband, I attended him with a care and tenderness that he rewarded with perdition.

When he took his leave of us, he seemed to labour under a sense of insufferable obligations. As soon as his health was established, he sent me a diamond necklace of great value; but Mr. Grace was then in the country, and I directly returned the traitor's present. The next day he sent up his name, and requested to be admitted; but I excused myself from receiving the visits of gentlemen in the absence of my husband. The day following, however, having bribed my servants, he was permitted to enter my chamber; when, without addressing a word to his lordship, I severely rebuked my maid for such an insolent intrusion, and withdrawing hastily to my closet, I clapt to the door.

After this I heard no more of lord Riot for some time; but, alas! he and his diabolical instruments were not idle. One evening, being seized with an unaccountable drowsiness, I lay down, and was insensible to every thing that passed, 'till I awakened the day following in a strange bed, and in the arms of my cruel and accursed undoer.

I instantly screamed out; and pushing him violently from me, sprung out upon the floor. While I huddled on my clothes, all the horrors of my condition rose full upon my view. I flew to the door, but finding it locked, I was seized with sudden madness. I dashed the piers and jars to shivers. I caught whatever came in my way, and threw it at the villain, who, terrified by my fury, made his escape through a back-door, and bolted it after him.

Some

Some women, whom he sent to me, recovered me from a fit. The dear and tender images of husband and children then came to my mind. My rage was drowned in my grief; I wept and sobbed without ceasing.

For three weeks I continued thus immured and inconsolable, my fits of frenzy still returning whenever Lord Riot presented himself to my view. At length, I assumed the patience to expostulate with him on the irretrievable ruin he had brought upon me, my wreck of fame and honour; and what was infinitely worse, my loss of husband and children, to whose faces I never more should dare to lift an eye.

While I continued to reproach my betrayer, we heard a bustle below stairs. He flew to some pistols that hung in the apartment. The door burst open. My husband suddenly entered. Lord Riot fired at him, and somebody fell. But I waited not to enquire into the issue of the scuffle. The face of my injured husband was now more dreadful to me than that of my ravisher. The doors lay open. I hurried to the street. I flew along I knew not where; and running into a little shop, I sat down by the counter, and fainted away.

The poor woman of that little house behaved herself toward me with much humanity. I told her part of my unhappy story. And as I determined for ever to hide myself from family and acquaintance, and as far as possible from the world, she put me in the way of getting into service; whereby I have received the only consolation, of which I am capable on this side the grave, that of your ladyship's favour and protection.

Here Mrs. Grace closed her distressful history. As Sir Hammer and I greatly pitied and esteemed her, we endeavoured to give her comfort, by observing, that there was nothing in this adventure, wherewith the most censorious, or even a husband
of

of the most delicate sentiments, could reproach her. Ah madam, said she, when my body was as pure as my spirit, I was every way unworthy of Mr. Grace; and shall I now bring pollution to his honourable bosom? How will the world interpret my residing three weeks in the house and custody of a libertine? Alas, I have no portion save disgrace to bequeath to my dear infants, nor any legacy to my kindred but confusion of face. But—I feel that I hasten to the end of my sorrows.

As she spoke her countenance altered, and we persuaded her to lie down and try to take some repose.

Within an hour or two after, a gentleman came, and hastily enquired for my husband. It was Mr. Grace. My dear Sir Hanmer, said he eagerly, rejoice with me! my Peggy is innocent, she is virtuous as ever. That ruffian Lord Riot, by the promise of a thousand guineas, prevailed on her woman to give her a sleeping potion, and had her conveyed to his house during her state of insensibility. O my Peggy, might I but behold you once again! Riot, finding it impossible to subdue her to his pleasure, refused to pay the woman the price of her perfidy, and she in revenge told me where he held my wife secreted. O my distressed, my shamefaced angel, what is become of you? I took out a replevin, and forced my way into the villain's house. He aimed a pistol at me, but happened to shoot his accomplice. He then drew his sword, but at the second pass I pierced him to the heart. The traitress did not immediately die of her wound; she survived till within this hour, and in her mortal agonies, she revealed to me all the circumstances of this diabolical plot.

Here we consoled Mr. Grace, by informing him that his lady was safe and in the house; but that she was something indisposed, and had lain down

to

to rest. His impatience was too great to be restrained from seeing her. I entered her chamber first, and apprised her of his coming. As he tenderly approached, she started up in her bed, and her bosom was agitated with agonizing emotions. She gazed wildly at him. She attempted to speak, but could not find utterance; when, seizing his hand, and catching it to her lips, she sunk down gently, and expired upon the pressure.

As some of the company still continued to honour lady Homespun's pathetic narration with their tears, lady Cribbage, cried out, cards, cards here immediately, to drive away melancholy!

After cards an elegant supper was served up, and after supper the conversation happened to turn upon dress.

Is it not amazing cried Sner, (with a sarcastical glance at the ladies) is it not amazing to think, that the nature and reason of things should be so wholly inverted as, in some cases, to mean and effect the very reverse of their original intention and institution? The first use that was made of the fig-leaf demonstrates, that dress was solely appointed for the covering of shame and nakedness: and yet woman has been so ingenious, in process of time, as to turn the loss of her robe of original innocence, into matter of pride and ostentation.

The covering from cold, as well as from shame, said the Colonel, may be allowed of some sensible use, with respect to dress; at least among us, who are placed so far north of the tropic.

Our neighbour Lewis, last winter, had occasion to pass through the streets of Paris. His travelling palace was drawn by eight white steeds. The frost was intensely sharp; the glasses were all drawn up; and this warm enterprizer for universal monarchy, sat shivering amidst the wrappings of his furs and robings.

As he passed, he espied a young man of a portly personage, standing at an angle, clad in a single silk coat, with his hair powdered out, and his hat under his arm.

Lewis instantly pulled the bell; his coach stopped; he let down a side window; he ordered the stranger to be called; and as nothing makes a man so mannerly as the sensible want of something from the party to whom he applies, the Monarch addressed him with the most gracious and affable air, and requested to know by what means he could keep himself so warm, in such extremity of weather.

That, Sire, answered the stranger, is a secret which my honour forbids me to reveal; and which nothing shall extort from me, save the commands of your Majesty. I promise you, Sir, said the King, that I shall not be ungrateful; and that you shall have no cause to repent your having entrusted me with your recipe. I engage then, Sire, that provided you follow my prescription, there shall not be so warm a Monarch in the Universe. I am impatient, pray inform me, what am I to do? As I do, so please your Majesty; put your whole wardrobe upon your back! The King laughed himself into a heat, and that very hour ordered a commission in his own guards to be made out for his prescriber.

Your story, Colonel, is elegantly facetious, said lady Maitland. I apprehend, however, that other valuable purposes are answered by dress, over and above the mere decency and comfort of clothing. Were it not for the various distinctions of dress, it would be impossible to point out the several orders of men throughout the respective subordinations that are necessary to society. Without this useful expedient, we should be in utter confusion, we should not know who was who; we should not know to whom respect or obedience was

was due, nor be able to ascertain the prince from the peasant.

O lud, cried Mrs. Mawkin, as your ladyship says, how frightfully humbling and mortifying it would be! Without the richness of dress, how should we of the grand monde shew any difference between ourselves and vile plebeians?

O, madam, answered lady Cribbage, plebeians are not confined to low life alone; the great world has its vulgar too, I assure you. The difference does not lie in the richness; I have seen an ass clothed in a very gorgeous sumpter-cloth. The true distinction lies in wearing the qualities of the mind on the outward habit, in the peculiarity of fancy and elegance of taste.

Your ladyship might surely have added, said Miss Trinket, that dress is a handmaid to beauty too; it serves to adorn and embellish nature with art, and to make what is lovely still more attracting. However brilliant a diamond may be in itself, it wants of its value and lustre till suitably set; there may be an elegance to be sure in the manner of setting, but still it ought to be cased in nothing but gold.

I greatly lament the departure of Mrs. Philligree, said lord Mansfield, it is she who would have adorned your ornaments ladies; and have dressed out dress itself, in a sumptuous outre of terms, and new cut of phrase. I agree indeed with the countess, that some tokens or markings, such as those that dress supplies, are requisite for distinguishing the several orders and subordinations of people in a community; but I am sorry to find that these same markings or tokens should, very nearly, engross the whole of the things intended to be signified. If you take the full-bottomed wig from a judge, what will become of his wisdom? or lawn and sattin from bishops, what would become of their sanctity? or, should monarchs be deprived

deprived of their crowns and regalia, I doubt it would be a fearful abridgment of majesty.

I also agree with lady Cribbage, that the qualities of the mind are worn on the outward habit. But, pray ye, what sort of internal qualities do those external habits exhibit? even every species of affectation, folly, and vanity, that is conceivable. The whole futile soul of a female seems to have forsaken its frail mansion, and to float upon the surface of her attire. In the long labours of the toilette, where so much pains, time, and treasure is expended on an elaborate externity, does not a woman as good as confess, that the whole of her value lies where the whole of her care is bestowed?

Now, in all these operations, female vanity proposes to excite the same sensations in others that it feels in and for itself, on the pleasing contemplation of its own image. Ah misdeeming and pitiable objects! while ye pass along, or sit exalted in your imaginary pre-eminence, some of your sex behold you with an eye of contempt, others with an eye of envy, and all with an eye of malevolence, inquisitive after your miscarriages, and desirous of publishing and magnifying the smallest of your failings.

Men, indeed, behold you with an eye of pleasure, because they draw an inference from your vanity that flatters their own. They contemplate you as dressing at them. They consider the labours of your toilette as a confession of desiring to be desired; as an advance on your part, and a kind of challenge for them to approach and capitulate.

I own that beauty, as Miss Trinket has observed, may occasionally derive a sort of accession from dress, like a diamond encased in precious metal. But how much more generally do we observe conceited ugliness and deformity deriving additional darkness from the lustre that surrounds it, like a turnip or toadstool encircled by gems?

Whether

Whether finery gives additional force to the magnet of beauty, for exciting and drawing our affections to it, is an article of which I am much in doubt. What say you to this question, Mr. Fenton?

I hold, my lord, said Mr. Fenton, that finery is merely a Narcissus, that neither loves nor is beloved by any except itself. It is much to be questioned whether belle or beau ever engaged the affections of any sensible person of the opposite sex; and where they themselves have been susceptible of the delicate passion, they, from that moment, ceased to be belles or beaus. Paris is the only beau, as I remember, that ever was capable of loving a woman; and yet, as you all know, she was not a dressed lady to whom he gave the prize.

Dame Iris was the greatest belle in all the heaven of Pagan theology. She was, as we may say, the female Joseph dressed out in her gay coat of many colours; and yet we do not find that she ever attracted the love of a single immortal, or even mortal, though she duly and daily visits them in all her finery, and fails not to shed showers of tears at their disdain.

Finery may dazzle, it may awe, but cannot possibly excite the smallest pittance of affection. This can alone be done by something more personal, by something less superficial. Even the *simplex munditiis*, that ornament of a clean simplicity, recommended by Horace, can operate only by imitation of deeper purity. The Virtues alone can weave the truly enchanting robe of female influence, and the Graces alone gird on the Cæstus or girdle of irresistible beauty.

Among the infinite variety of female fashions, which, in turns, have been fantastically predominant upon earth, I remember but of one so very obsolete as not to have revived in some distant age or climate. That the memory of this same fashi-

on

on should not be wholly lost, it is recorded by St. Paul in his first epistle to Timothy. There he recommends it to the ladies, to "adorn themselves" with sobriety and shamefacedness, not with "broidered hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array."

St. Paul, however, in this piece of advice, appears to have spread a net for the hearts of his own sex. The haughty, reluctant, and stubborn spirit of man, can reject wealth and title, can look with indifference on these symmetry of shape and features, and guard itself against the attack of female artifice; but female bashfulness is an unconscious thief, to whom the doors of all hearts are instantly thrown open.

In short, the maid who would achieve the whole laurel of conquest, must not be obvious or obtrusive; like Daphne, she must fly though pursued by an Apollo.

Here the company, breaking up, gave distinct and pressing invitations to Mr. Fenton; but he politely excused his attendance for the present, on account of a multiplicity of indispensable business.

On the following morning, as he sat in his study, some one tapped at the door; and on being desired to walk in, who should enter but lady Maitland in an agreeable deshabille.

Mr. Fenton, said she (deeply blushing and hesitating) I, I—you must think it very odd—I say, Sir, I should not have intruded upon you, thus out of all form, perhaps indecency, unseasonably.—Please to be seated, madam.—The business I come upon, Sir, is so very interesting, so concerning to my peace, that I could not refuse myself this opportunity of breaking in upon you.—Be assured, my dear madam, that the greatest pleasure you can do me is to let me know, as soon as possible, wherein I can serve you.

Here

Here the countess, looking eagerly and inquisitively on him, put her hand in her bosom, took out a picture, and alternately surveying the one and the other, Yes, she cried, it is, it must certainly be so. Then, reaching out the picture, can you tell me, Sir, said she, for whom this was drawn, or rather do you remember to whom you gave it?

Mr. Fenton took the picture, looked at it, and started; when, recollecting ideas and passages as from afar off, Good God; he exclaimed, is it possible, can you be my little Fanny Goodall? Yes, my dearest cousin, answered the countess, as surely as you are the still too amiable Harry Clinton.

Hereupon they both rose suddenly, and Mr. Fenton, catching his quondam Fanny in his arms, pressed her to his bosom with warm and kindred affection. But the agitation of the countess was too big for utterance; till, resuming her chair, she gave scope to her passion, and burst into a violent flood of tears.

After a mutual and affecting silence; Ah! cries Mr. Fenton, in a voice expressive of much emotion, how am I, my lovely cousin, to interpret these tears? Am I to consider them as further proofs of your ancient aversion to me, or as kindly and dear instances of your returning affection? — The countess answered not; and Mr. Fenton continued.

You may remember, my cousin, that I had very few relations. My only brother ever continued, to behave himself toward me as an alien and an enemy; and my only uncle and guardian, who, in his latter years, became your father, was no way agreeable to my taste or disposition. In you, therefore, from your infancy, in you alone, my amiable cousin, I had centered all my sensations of fatherhood, brotherhood, all the affections and tender feelings that naturally arise from kindred and consanguinity.

How

How have I been delighted with your infantine prattle! how have I exulted in your opening charms! On the death of my first wife you were my only consolation; and in your innocent caresses and attractive endearments, I felt a sweetness of emotion that I never felt before.

On my return from France, with what transports did you receive me! we grew as it were in our embracements, to each other. You were then, as I apprehend, about ten years of age. But on my next visit, you refused to be seen by me. Soon after you were taken ill. I daily went, with an aching heart, to enquire after your health; but your mamma peremptorily refused me admission to your presence, till, on your recovery, you were conveyed from me, and secreted into the country.

Though this unkindness went near my heart, it did not alter my affections; I still continued to enquire after you, I still continued to be interested in you, and I preferred my ardent wishes and prayers to heaven for your prosperity.

Mr. Fenton, said lady Maitland, (you have unquestionably your reasons for chusing to be so called) I am very sensible, Sir, I say, of your extraordinary partiality to me from my earliest years. Your tenderness, as you mentioned, was that of the fondest of fathers or brothers. You knew the degree and kind of affection that was suitable between such relations; and you kept yourself precisely within the limits. But alas! for my part, I knew no such distinctions. I was as a piece of virgin wax, warmed and willingly yielding to the first kindly impression. You made that impression, my cousin, you made it deep and entire. As I had but the one heart, so I had but the one love; and that love was all your own, without distinction or degree.

Gracious heaven, exclaimed Mr. Fenton, what is this you tell me, madam? Is it possible, that at
your

your years, you should actually conceive a passion for one who might almost have been your grandfather? Ah, if that be the case, what have I not to answer, for indulging you and myself in those innocent caresses, which, at that time, fondly constituted the most pleasing sensations of my life!

Alas, replied the countess, if you have any thing to answer for, on that account, the charge indeed is very weighty which I have to bring against you.

I was not eight years old when I begged this picture from you, which you generously enriched with this circlet of diamonds. Soon after, you went to France; and during your absence, this picture was my constant companion, whom I caressed, whom I talked to, and to whom alone I made my complaints in all my little matters of grievance.

I know not by what instinct or kind of cunning it was, that I endeavoured to conceal my affection for this your resemblance, and never made my court to it but when I was alone.

The morning after your visit, on your return from Paris, as I was carelessly performing the business of my little toilette before the glass; I took out your picture, and surveyed it with new and increasing delight. In the mean time I did not know that my mamma stood behind me, attentive to all my motions that were reflected to her by the mirror. She heard me talk to your picture, she saw me kiss it, and eagerly press it to my bosom. At last I turned my eye to the glass, and perceived a piece of her image; whereon I started, coloured, and trembled, and was thrown, I knew not why, into the utmost confusion.

Ah, Fanny, cried my mother, what is this that I see? your young heart, my child, is certainly affected. Unquestionably you love your cousin Clinton.

Ought

Ought I not to love him, madam? does he not love me, as well as I love him? No, no, my darling, said my mother, I would to Heaven that he did. Your cousin Clinton indeed is worthy of all love, but then he has lately given away his heart to another. He is married, my Fanny—And cannot he love me still, for all that, madam?—By no means, my sweet innocent. When once a man marries, he vows and swears, and obliges himself to love nobody living but his wife; and what is more my Fanny, it is accounted very naughty in any girl to think of loving such a one afterwards.

What emotions did I then feel, what a conflict of opposing passions! but resentment, for the time, got the upper hand. I had yet formed no idea of the relations of sex, or matrimony, or any conjugal obligation, save that of love alone. But then it was sufficient to me that I had given you my whole heart; that nothing less than your whole heart could satisfy me in return; and I felt myself offended and outraged to the last degree, by your having imparted a share thereof to another.

The day following, as I sat languid and much discomposed, as well by my passion as want of rest the night before; my mamma came up to tell me that you was below and enquired for me. No, no, my dearest mamma, said I, it does not signify, I will not see him. Let him go to whomever he loves best—But what shall I say to him, my Fanny, what excuse shall I make?—No matter for excuse, madam; tell him that I never desire to see his face any more.

As something informed me that you could not help still loving me a little, I laid hold of that little love to pique, and disoblige, and be revenged of you for your perfidy; and as long as you staid, the thoughts of the pain and uneasiness, I presumed you were under, gave me vast delight. But as soon as I was told you were gone, my heart sunk down,

as

as from a mount of triumph, into a depth of desolation.

My mamma came up to console me. She highly applauded my spirit, and the resentment I had shewed; and she blamed you for marrying another, at a time that you pretended so much fondness to me. She further endeavoured to set me against your age. She told me that you must soon be old and ugly, and wrinkled, and that you were much fitter to be my father than my lover. She also spoke to me of my vast fortune, of my beauty, and so forth; and that I might have my pick and choice of all the young and handsome earls and dukes in the nation. She opened to me, in a variety of glittering prospects, all the pleasures and advantages of wealth, title, state, equipage, with the respects and admiration of crowds bending around me. As she represented them to my imagination, I caught at each of them for comfort; but alas, I did not find you among them, and all to me became empty.

That night my tender mamma forsook her own bed, and came to lie in mine. I saw that she had been afflicted; so, for fear of adding to her trouble, I suppressed my own emotions, and pretended to be asleep, I lay quiet by her side till toward morning, when I was seized with a violent fever. During my illness I was told that you came daily to enquire about me; and that, I believe, above all things contributed to my recovery. One day, my mamma came and informed me that you sat below in tears, and earnestly requested to be permitted to see me. O, how sweet and comforting did those tears seem to drop upon my heart! but, mustering all my little pride and remaining dignity, no, no, my mamma, I cried, I will die first! If he does not first unmarry himself, I will never see him any more.

When

When I had gotten strength enough to walk about the chamber, my mamma and I being alone, I went to my drawer ; and taking out your picture, and turning my head aside, I reached it to her, saying, here, madam, take this and lock it up from me ; for while I love it and hate it so much, it troubles me to look at it. My mamma thereupon took it from me, and caught me to her bosom ; but without saying a word, she burst into tears, and straight quitted the room.

As soon as it was judged that I was able to travel, my parents, by the advice of their doctors, took me far into the country. My mother, in the mean time, had unquestionably confided my secret to my father ; for though he was naturally of a severe and backward temper, he became extremely tender and indulgent toward me.

As I was the only child they ever had, their whole care and solicitude was affectionately employed in procuring me a variety of gratifications and amusements. When I was in spirits, they were in a kind of triumph ; but my dejection was to them the most grievous of all oppressions. They took down my French mistress and musick master with them ; and they collected, from all parts, the most agreeable set of mistresses and masters that they could muster ; so that my time was portioned out the most happily that could be, between business and recreations that were equally pleasing. They had taken care that your name should never be mentioned before me ; and though, at times, my soul was athirst, and my ear opened and turned to hear tidings concerning you, yet a certain native bashfulness and fear of offending against decency, did not permit me to enquire after you.

Thus a length of absence and a variety of dissipations, by degrees, greatly abated the ardour of my passion, insomuch that I did not seem to feel any more for you. When any occasion, however, renewed

renewed in me the impression of former scenes, a thrilling sort of chillness would run through my blood. And at other times, when alone and thinking of you, a swimming kind of stupor would fall sadly upon my soul.

On our return to London, after five years absence, the great number of people, with the novelty and variety of objects that crowded upon my view, amused and engaged my whole attention. But, when we entered the old mansion; when I turned my eyes on the places where you sat, where you walked, where you talked and used to caress me, you became as it were actually visible to my eyes; something seemed to wring my heart; and I was seized with a sickness near to fainting. I took hold of my maid by the arm, and with her help walked into the garden for fresh air; but there too you had got before me, on the terrace, in the walks and alleys, where you used to run feigned races with me, and to gather fruit for me, and to play with me at bob-cherry, and afterwards to press the lips that had gained the prize. I then turned away from a place that afforded me no asylum from you. My mother met, and eagerly asked what ailed me? Let us go, mamma, I cried, let us go some where else, I am not able to stay in this place any longer. Accordingly, that very evening, we removed to lodgings; and, in a few days, my dada took and furnished a new house.

I shall not dwell, my dear Sir, on a trivial detail of the many circumstances and little incidents that happened during the space of four succeeding years. An infinity of suitors paid their addresses to me or my fortune, I neither knew nor cared to which, for I continued alike insensible to all. It is true, that during such a number of years, having neither seen nor heard from you, I dropt all thoughts of you, and scarce retained the traces or lineaments of your person or aspect. From the impression,

however, which you left in my mind, I had formed to myself a dear, though confused image of the lovely, of the desirable, and this I looked for every where, but could no where find any resemblance thereof.

In the mean time, my parents urged me strongly to matrimony. They affectingly represented that they should not die in peace, if I did not afford them the prospect of perpetuating themselves in my offspring; such is the fond succedaneum which short-lived creatures propose for eking out their existence, and supplying the lot of an inevitable mortality, by the flattering, though poor, substitute of a name or bare remembrance!

At length I told my parents that, as I could not form any choice of my own, I would trust wholly to their judgment, and take up with whomsoever they should be pleased to appoint. Hereupon they recommended the Earl of Maitland to me. I kept to my promise, and we were consequently married.

My husband was comely in his person, easy and affable in his temper, and a man of singular sense and letters for a lord. He loved me with passion; and as I could not pay him in specie, I endeavoured to supply my want of affection to him by my attention and assiduities.

On the fifth year of my marriage my father died of a good old age; and in four years more my dearest mother left me desolate. In her I lost the only object of fond affections that I had upon earth, and my looks tacitly reproached my husband for his want of power to console me.

I believe it was equally unhappy for my lord, as myself, that we were not blessed with children. The dear and tender attachments that bind parents to their offspring, serve also as a subsequent and more affecting nuptial band for uniting those parents more intimately to each other. It draws about them a new circle of interests and amities;
and

and by creating a mutual confidence, forbids the intrusion of those jealousies that must at all times pre-suppose an alienation of regard. This, however, was not the case between lord Maitland and me. We never had a child. Perhaps, in some constitutions, an union of souls as well as persons may be requisite for such an effect.

During the two years succeeding the death of my dear mother, I conceived a disgust against company and entertainments. I took a religious turn. I looked upon this world, and all that it contained, as quite unworthy the regard of an immortal being. The principal part of my time was taken up in books and offices of devotion; in which employment I alternately sunk under the most gloomy depression of spirits, and again was elevated above myself into a new world of joys and inexpressible openings.

At length I was taken exceedingly ill of what the physicians called a fever upon the nerves, which confined me to my bed above six weeks. During my illness, my husband was the most constant and assiduous of all my attendants. The affectionate sadness, the painful distress, the tender solicitude, that was visible in all his looks and actions, made way into my soul, with an obliging impression; and while I reproached myself for my ungrateful defect of sensibility toward him, love, or something tender and very like to love, took place in my bosom.

As soon as I was on the recovery, my husband disappeared, without taking leave or giving me any notice; and for three weeks I knew not what was become of him. At length he returned, pale and greatly emaciated. I had yet lost none of the tenderness which I conceived for him during my illness. I took him affectionately by the hand, which glowed like a coal of fire. Ah, I cried, where have you been, what looks are these, my

lord, what is the meaning of all this? He answered not; but withdrawing his hand, and scarce deigning to look toward me, I am not well, he faintly said, I must go to my bed.

While his servants undressed him, I stood in silent astonishment, vainly guessing at the cause of this extraordinary behaviour: but as soon as he had lain down, I took a seat by his side; and seizing and pressing one of his hands between mine, I broke into tears.

After a sad and mutual silence, Ah, madam, cried my husband, what am I to understand by these tears? I am willing to consider them as proofs of your humanity, but I cannot consider them as instances of your affection. You love me not, madam; you never did love me. All the constancy and complacency of the most ardent passion, all my endeavours and assiduities have not been able to procure me the smallest interest in your heart. I blame you not, madam; alas! we are not the masters of our own affections. I am sensible that I never deserved your love. That was a blessing reserved for a more amiable object. But then the tenderness and truth of my attachment to you might surely have laid claim to a share of your confidence. Ah, how precious had such a confidence been to my heart! it had stood to me in the place of your love, and I should not have reproached you for irresistible propensities: yes, madam, I say irresistible, for I know you are virtuous. Perhaps it was not in your power to refuse another your love; but then you might have admitted your husband to a share of your friendship.

You have my friendship, I cried, my tenderest friendship, my most affectionate regards. If my love is not so ardent as you could wish, you however have all the love of which I am capable, and you possess it entire and undivided.

What

What is this you tell me, madam? I would to heaven you could still deceive me, that I had still continued in ignorance! but that is past; it is over, madam; my eyes are opened to my wretchedness, and I die in the double want of your faith and your affection. I have seen your lover, lady; I saw him four days ago from an opposite window. He stood before this house in converse with another. I expected every moment, that taking advantage of my absence, he would have gained admission to you. I held my sword ready to follow, to pierce his heart, and sacrifice him to the claims of my honour and my love. But he suddenly disappeared and disappointed my vengeance.

Gracious heaven! I exclaimed, what madness is this? Do you dream, or who is it that has thus cruelly imposed upon you? You shall see the impostor, madam, replied my lord. So saying, he suddenly put his hand back; and taking your picture from under the pillow, he indignantly demanded, Do you know the original of this portrait, lady? Ah, I screamed, I confess it, I do know him, I did know him indeed: he was the idol of my heart; I delighted in him, I doated upon him! You then acknowledge, you avow it, rejoined my husband; and at length you deign to make me the confidant of a passion which I suppose, in your favour, to have been involuntary. Ah, had I been earlier apprised of my unhappiness, I might not have sunk under the unexpected and sudden pressure as I do at this day. But say, who and what is this formidable rival, who robs me of my peace, who tears my life from me?

First tell me, my lord, said I, how you came by this picture? I found it in your cabinet during your illness, said he, when I searched for your essences to relieve you from a fainting fit. I flatter myself

myself that I am not of a jealous disposition. Curiosity first incited me to hurry it into my pocket. I afterwards surveyed it more at leisure, and some starting doubts arose. I endeavoured to suppress them; I argued with myself that it might be a family picture, the representative of a brother or dear relation deceased. But then some enemy of my peace again whispered to my spirit, that, if this had been the case, you would not be so solicitous to conceal it from me; you would rather have boasted of such an ornament of your lineage; you would have been proud to exhibit it before all people—this staggered me I confess; and additional doubts and suggestions were impelled upon my soul. She reserves this, said I to myself, for her own eye and inspection; to revise it, to gaze and dwell upon it in secret; and to please her sight with the favourite image that is impressed upon her heart. At each of these reflections, I felt a sting in my bosom; and the more I revolved and debated on these uncertainties, the greater strength they gained, and drew nearer to demonstration. Ah, I cried, her real coldness and feigned regards are now equally accounted for. She deceives me, she imposes upon me; and I will counterfeit in my turn till this mystery is detected. I then attempted and would have constrained myself to look at you with my accustomed tenderness; but I found it impossible. I therefore withdrew suddenly and without any notice. If ever she had a tincture of friendship for me, thought I, the apprehension of my loss will awake in her a sense thereof. I disguised myself; and, as a stranger, took lodgings over-against you. I took my station at the window. I was on the watch from morn till noon, to make a thorough inquisition into your conduct during my absence. I shall discover her disposition, said I, by the visitants whom she receives; but, during a fortnight of observation, I
could

could not perceive that, of the numbers who called, any one was admitted. My jealous passions abated; and I began to reproach myself for having ever conceived them; when, to my utter confusion, there stood full to my view, in dress, aspect, mien, attitude, the distinguished original of the portrait which I had in my pocket.

Here I passionately broke in upon my husband's narration. God be praised, I exclaimed! he then lives, he still lives, my most dear and amiable cousin, though I never wish to behold his face any more! My only relation, perhaps now my only friend, you are still living, and I trust you are happy; and that is enough!

Your relation, your only relation, madam, cried my lord! is he so near? is he no nearer, no dearer to you than consanguinity will warrant? Proceed, my lord, I said; I will then tell you all, without disguise or palliation.

I confess to you, answered my husband, that the sight of him struck my soul with the fullest conviction of my being betrayed. My jealous pangs returned with double poignancy. I was enkindled, I was set on fire, my heart was rent several ways. A violent fever seized upon me, but my fury and thirst of vengeance supported me under it. For four days longer I held up in the impatient expectation of once more beholding your lover, that I might pierce him in a thousand places, in every seducing part about him. But nature at length gave way; I sunk under the oppression; and I returned, once for all, to behold, to reproach, and to expire before you.

O, my husband, my friend, my true lover, I cried, how I pity, how I feel for you? I excuse your suspicions, however injurious to my honour, since your jealousy perhaps is not wholly without foundation. I did indeed love the person for whom that portrait was drawn, with tenderness, with
passion:

passion: but believe me, when I assure that I have not set my eyes, either on the original or picture these twenty years.

What is this you tell me? exclaimed my lord. You are not yet, as I take it, thirty years of age. Could you love, even to passion, at so very early a period?

Here I found myself under the necessity of discovering to my husband the little adventures, impressions, and sentiments of my infancy, where-with you are already acquainted. When I had finished my short narrative, he seized my hand, and pressing it passionately to his lips, and then to his burning bosom, he melted into tears. O, my Fanny, he cried, my most noble, my adorable creature! what a combat have you fought, what a conquest have you gained, of grace over nature, of virtue against passion! Can you excuse me, will you forgive me? may I hope that you will restore me to the blessings of your friendship? May I flatter myself that you gave me as much as you could of your affections? that if you had been able, you would have loved me with a love like mine?

I will not distress you, my cousin, by a description of the affecting scenes that ensued. My husband left me vastly rich, but still more forlorn. During the first years of widowhood, I looked upon myself as a friendless and unnecessary burden upon earth. Though I thought of you at times, it was not without a resentment and a tincture of aversion, for your never having deigned to enquire or find out, whether any such person, as your too affectionate Fanny Goodall, was in the land of the living. At length my physicians and my friends (as they styled themselves) prevailed upon me once more, to enter into the light and air and amusements of their world. I consented. I found my advantage in it. I gradually got rid of the grievous oppression that lay upon my spirits. Since all

is vanity, thought I, let us partake of the dissipation, and make it as pleasing as we can; and accordingly you found me in the engagements which you honoured with your inspection yesterday.

When you entered, I did not know you. The strange name of Fenton, as well as the alteration which years had made in you, shut you out almost wholly from my recollection. I felt myself, however, agitated I knew not why. Something in your person and manner renewed in my heart impressions kindred to those which were once its sole concern. I could not look at you, I could not speak to you, without emotion. All night I lay disturbed, in vain endeavouring to remember when or where I had seen you. At morning a sudden light darted in upon my mind. I got up and flew to your picture, which at once laid all open, and detected your disguise.

You are much altered, cousin. Had I first seen you as you now appear, I think my young heart would not have been so deeply affected. The ruin however is still very noble, and endearingly renews in me the idea of what the building once was.

Your abstracted air, and the change of your name, seem to intimate some distressing situation. But, if fifty thousand pounds, or that sum doubled, will be of use to you, I shall for once think that fortune has been of advantage to me.

My most dear and generous cousin, replied Mr. Fenton, I shall never pardon myself those griefs which the excess of my affection inadvertently occasioned you. No brother ever loved a sister, no parent a child, with sonder passion. The aversion, which I thought you had suddenly taken to me, was one of the most sensible afflictions of my life; and my ignorance of what latterly became of you, can only be accounted for, by an abstract of my own story.

Here Mr. Fenton called for chocolate. And after breakfast, he gave lady Maitland the following affecting history of his own life and adventures.

C H A P. XIII.

STORY of the Hon. Mr. CLINTON.

THE world, my lovely cousin, the world is to man, as his temper or complexion. The mind constitutes its own prosperity and adversity: winter presents no cloud to a chearful spirit, neither can summer find sunshine for the spirit that is in a state of dejection. In my youth every object presented me with happiness; but alas, the time came, when the universe appeared as a vault wherein joy was entombed, and the sun himself but as a lamp that served to shew the gloom and the horrors around me.

As my father and mother died before I was taken from nurse, I knew none of those parental tenderneesses and endearments that serve to humanize the soul, and give it the first impressions of social attachment; neither were those sweetneesses in any degree supplied to me, by the behaviour of an imperious brother, or of a magisterial guardian. As I was naturally, however, of a benevolent cast, I fought for these affections and amities
among

among strangers, which I had not found in the bosoms or faces of kin.

I pass over the immaterial parts of my life at school and college, and hasten to the more important period of my apprenticeship.

Your father bound me to Mr. Golding, a very wealthy and eminent merchant, who lived over against the Exchange. He had been some years a widower, and his only child, a daughter, was then at a boarding school.

Mr. Golding, with a plain understanding, was a man of exceeding honesty and a susceptible heart. At first sight he conceived a partial affection for me, whereof he gave me very frequent and very tender proofs; and, as he stood to me in the place of a patron and a father, I felt for him all the fondness and attachment of a child.

In the fourth year of my apprenticeship he called me to his closet, and taking me kindly by the hand, Harry, says he, I love you; your interest lies near my heart; for though you are not the begotten of my body, you are the child of my affections——Be quiet Harry——let me speak——I have to talk to you of matters of consequence.——I went yesterday to your uncle Goodall, to know how accounts stood between ye——though he is but a cold kinsman, he is a very faithful guardian.——He has just married a very lovely young woman, and I would have you go and pay your compliments to them on the occasion——Your uncle has laid out your little penny to good advantage, and your 12000*l.* is now nearly doubled——And now Harry, as your father did not behave like a father toward you in the dividend which he made between you and your brother, I propose in some measure to supply his place, and I make you a present of this note of 12000*l.* which added to your little patrimony may enable you.——O, Sir! I cried.——Be quiet, child, I
say

say again, till you find whether or no you shall have reason to thank me.—I am growing old, my Harry, and by a long course of industry have earned a kind of title to some little rest; I would therefore gladly make a composition between your application and my repose. I shall not be so often in the counting-house as usual. I propose to take you into immediate partnership. But as I also propose that you shall be at three-fourths of the trouble, it is but just that I should offer you a proportionable advantage.—Now as my capital, Harry is more than five times as much as yours of 36000*l*. I offer to your acceptance a full moiety of all the profits in recompence of your extraordinary attention and application.—Hear me out—I do not think that I shall lose by this bargain. The affairs of Potiphar prospered under the hands of young Joseph; and I believe that you, also, are a favourite of your God.

I could not speak. The good man perceived my oppression, and catching me in his arms, and pressing me to his bosom, he shed a silent tear of satisfaction upon me, and withdrew without saying another word.

For several days following, Mr. Golding was employed in advising his correspondents that I was now become his partner and equal in trade, and I was wearied with congratulations on my being one of the principal merchants in London, before I had attained my twentieth year.

The obligations and advantages which this good man thus delighted to heap upon me, incited me to double application and sagacity, and all the eyes of Argus were opened within me for superintending and guarding the interests of my patron.

I have often thought it somewhat romantic, that I should win both my wives by a matter of adventure; so that their partiality in my favour ought, perhaps, to be ascribed to a sentiment of gratitude,
rather,

rather than to any liking which they might take to my person.

On a day in summer, I rode to Barnet to settle accounts with Mr. Fradgil, a correspondent of my master's, who was said to be indisposed at his country-seat. As I approached the town, I observed an elderly Gentlewoman walking leisurely toward me, attended by an orderly train of young maidens. I observed, at the same time, two men in glistering apparel, who hastily followed, and coming quickly up, put all the females to a stand, and caused them to gather in a group, as for mutual defence. One of the men, however, no way daunted by the opposition of so numerous a company, rudely caught one of the elder misses in his arms, and repeatedly kissing her, thrust his hand into her bosom. Mean while the young lady shrieked and cried aloud for help; when riding suddenly up, I struck the ruffian to the ground, with the heavy end of my whip. His companion hereupon drew his sword and turned upon me; but, pushing my horse at him, I cast him also to the earth; then alighting, I broke their swords, and leaving my gallants in a plight not suddenly to be dreaded, I led my horse by the bridle till I saw my fair wards all safe to their dwelling.

Some months after this incident, Mr. Golding called me aside. Harry, says he, my daughter is now drawing to woman's estate, and should learn something more substantial than needle-work, and dancing, and harpsicords, and Frenchified phrases. I therefore propose to take her home; where, by the help of our cook and housekeeper, she may be taught how to make a Sunday's pudding, and to superintend a family.

I regularly go to see her, once in every month, accompanied by some male or female acquaintance, but never called you to be of the party, as we could not so conveniently be both from home.

My

My child, though a plain girl, is very dutiful and good-natured. Her fortune, as you are sensible, will entitle her to the first lord of the land; yet, I know not how it is, I would rather that my girl should be happy than great. I do not wish to have her a fine titled dame. I would rather, I say, see her married to some honest and tender-hearted man, whose love might induce him to domesticate with her, and to live peaceably and pleasingly within his family circle, than to see her mated with a prince of the blood.

Now Harry, as this affair, of all affairs, fits nearest at my heart, it is greatly in your power to oblige me beyond expression. On my daughter's coming home, I conclude we shall be beset by a number of courtiers; such an Argo, when freighted with such a fleece, will unquestionably be held in chase by many a pirate. Wherefore, my son, I would have you keep a sharp and inquisitive eye about you, and to take good note of the manners and dispositions of such suitors as my daughter shall appear to regard; as also to enquire minutely into their circumstances and characters. Your vigilance and penetration may save us from ruin. Should my child be made unhappy, your friend must be most miserable. But I depend, my dear Harry, that while I live you will prove a kind brother to her; and that you will prove a father to her in case of my mortality. Here the good man, no longer able to restrain his passion, put his handkerchief to his eyes and quitted the chamber.

Within a few days Mr. Golding set out, accompanied by a number of his city-friends, in order to conduct his daughter home. On their arrival, I was deeply engaged in the counting-house, and it was near the time for supper before I could attend. As I entered, Mr. Golding presented me to his daughter, saying, this, my dear, is Mr. Clinton, my partner, my friend, my son, and your brother.

brother. Hereupon Miss Golding coloured, and drawing back as I approached to salute her, if I am not mistaken, Sir, says she, he is something more to us than all you have mentioned; it would ill become me to forget that he is the deliverer of your daughter.—Your deliverer, my dear Matty! how, where, when?—Why pray, papa, did Mr. Clinton never tell you of his adventure at Barnet?—No indeed, my dear.—It is not every one who would be silent, where so much was to be said to their own honour. I remember that your knights in romance, when too modest to boast of their own achievements, used to permit some friend or squire to deliver down to posterity the history of their adventures, and I take the liberty to be squire to Mr. Clinton on the like occasion.

Here Miss Golding began to give a narrative of the matter already recited, but in terms of high phrase and aggravated encomium. While all abashed and confused, I withdrew, saying, that I did not remember of any knights who stayed to hear their own story.

In truth, I was much surprised to hear Miss Golding mention the adventure of Barnet; for I did not recollect that I had ever seen her, and had taken much more note of two or three other misses than I had of her.

Being re-summoned to supper, Mr. Golding met me as I entered, and clasping me in his arms, O my Harry, he cried, how wonderfully gracious has God been to me, in sending my best friend to the rescue of my only child; in sending, at so critical and very fearful a conjuncture, perhaps the only person who had either gallantry or humanity enough to preserve her. Indeed, Sir, I replied, you owe me nothing; I did not even know that the lady was your daughter; and I could not pride myself, in any degree, on an action which I thought incumbent on every man to perform.

During

During supper Miss Golding was very chearful and agreeable. Her face, indeed, could not be numbered among the beauties; but her person was grace and majesty, though in miniature; her conversation was pleasing; and when she sung or touched her instruments, for she was mistress of several, her mein and motions were musick, each note seemed a sentiment, and we felt her fingers playing on the cordage of our hearts.

For the first three months after Miss Golding's arrival, all was crowding and gaiety, assembly and festival at our house. She was as a magnet, that drew and grouped all the peerage and gentry of England together. But as business happened to be very urgent at this season, I was not at liberty to partake of their amusements, and I resigned to Mr. Golding the commission which he had given me respecting the parties who declared themselves suitors.

As those suitors, in a daily and numerous succession, applied to Mr. Golding for his consent, his general answer was, that his good-liking was inseparable from that of his only child; that he would, if they pleased, consult her on the occasion, and faithfully report to them her approbation or dissent. In the like conclusive manner, when Mr. Golding repeatedly questioned his daughter, she would take his hand between her's, and kissing it, say, O no, my dear papa, this is not the man.

One day, as I sat alone in the counting-house, Miss Golding entered and presented me with an order from her father for 250*l*. And pray, madam, said I, why this ceremony, this matter of form? sure Miss Golding may at any time, command twenty times this sum without any order save her own intimation.—Indeed! are you serious, Mr. Clinton? I am very proud I assure you to have so much credit with you—But, Mr. Harry, how comes it to pass that we have so little of your company?

pany?—Your father's business, madam, deprives me of the pleasure I should otherwise have in attending you.—Again, Sir, I am quite proud that it is your attention to my father alone, which prevents your having any attention for his daughter—so saying, she vanished.

Immediately I was struck with a glimpse of some uncommon meaning in the words and behaviour of Miss Golding; but as I never had looked toward the way of her affections, I passed it lightly over, as some matter of whim or caprice in the sex.

Among the brilliant concourse of suitors that frequented our house, there was one Mr. Spelling, a young gentleman highly accomplished in his person and manners, and of a most amiable countenance and disposition. His father, like Miss Golding's, had been a merchant, and like him too had amassed an excessive fortune. As he was modest, as I may say, to a degree of shamefacedness, he did not declare himself a lover, till nearly the whole multitude of competitors had been discarded; then, with a blushing diffidence, he avowed his passion to Mr. Golding, and earnestly besought his consent and intercession in his favour. You have not only my consent, replied the good old man, you have also my best wishes, and shall have my best endeavours for your success: However, I must warn you at the same time, Mr. Spelling, that I will not do any violence to the inclinations of my child, although there are not two in the world whom I would prefer to you.

I was writing in my closet when Mr. Golding came in, with an anxious importance in his countenance, and told me what passed between him and Mr. Spelling, and asked if I did not approve the match. I do not know, Sir, said I, that man in England who is so deserving of your daughter as Mr. Spelling. Then, my dear Harry; I have a commission to give you. Matilda has a great respect

pect for your judgment; I beseech you to make use of your influence with her, and to exert all your oratory in behalf of this young man.——

But, Sir, will not Miss Matilda look on this as a matter of high presumption in one who has no manner of right to advise?——No matter; you may tell her that you did it by my desire, and that we are both of a mind with regard to this business.——Well, Sir, said I, since you are bent upon it, I will obey you; but it is the first time that ever I obeyed you with reluctance.

Soon after Mr. Golding left me his daughter entered, with a countenance visibly unquiet and confused. My papa, Sir, said she, informs me that you have a business of consequence to impart to me.——I hope, madam,—pray be seated a moment.——Indeed, my dear Miss Golding, this office was not of my chusing, and I hope, I say, you will be so good as to pardon my presumption, in consideration of my acting by your father's command——You alarm me, Mr. Clinton, pray proceed——Mr. Spelling, madam, at length, has had the assurance to declare his passion for you. Your father highly approves of Mr. Spelling for a son-in-law; and indeed, Miss, might I dare to speak my judgment, I know not where you could chuse to better advantage.——If that is the case, Mr. Harry, I wish that I also could be of the same opinion.——And are you not, madam? what objection can you form, what exception can you have to my friend Spelling?——A very simple one, Sir, and no better than this, that he is not the man who can make me happy.——I am sorry for it, my dear Miss Golding, I am truly sorry for it; were I to pick from mankind, were I to chuse throughout the world, if any one can deserve you, it is surely this same Spelling——And yet, Mr. Harry, I remember to have seen the man who, in every grace and merit, is infinitely preferable to your favourite
Spelling.

Spelling.—Where, when, my dear Miss?—When I am brought to the torture, I may possibly be under the necessity of confessing.—Pardon, pardon, sweet madam! I meant no offence; and yet I wish to heaven I knew.—But that you never shall know, Mr. Harry.—Pray then, madam, if I may adventure on one question more, has the party so highly favoured any knowledge of his own happiness?—I hope not, Mr. Harry; but of what advantage could his knowledge prove to me, I beseech you? Can you suppose that such a person as I have described could deign to look with favour on such a one as I am? I do not believe, madam, that the man is in England who would not think himself highly honoured, highly blessed by your hand. But then are you assured, Miss, that this man is worthy of it?—Ah, there lies my misfortune! he is too worthy, too noble, too accomplished, too lovely, too much every thing, for my wishes to leave any thing to my hopes. And now, Mr. Harry, that I have entrusted you with my secret, I hope you will not betray my confidence and reveal it to my papa. I rather trust and request, that you will use some other colour for reconciling him to my refusal of Mr. Spelling: and to make you some amends for the mortification I have given you, by rejecting your advocacy in behalf of your friend, I here engage never to marry without your approbation, though I do not promise, Sir, that you shall dictate to my choice. There is one thing further, Mr. Clinton, in which you may oblige me; it is to prevail on my father to dismiss these assemblies and revels that pester our house: indeed, they never were to my taste, though, by their novelty, at first, they might have helped to amuse a little matter of melancholy that hung upon my mind; but now they are grown quite insufferable to me.—Here her eye began to fill, and heaving a gentle sigh, she curtsied and withdrew.

Imme-

Immediately my heart was softened and affected. I saw the child of my friend and patron, the one in whom his hopes and fortunes and very life were wrapt up, I saw that she was unhappy, that she was very unhappy, at a time that she had forbidden me to attempt her relief, though I would, gladly have parted with half my fortune to have been enabled to give the object of her wishes to her arms.

In the mean while, my dearest madam, it was the farthest of all things from entering into my imagination, that I was the very person who sat so near her heart. I daily saw the loveliest youths and titled chiefs of the land attendant on her words and smiles, and humbly suing for her favour: I saw also, that her immense fortune and rare attractions justly entitled her to their homage; and I was neither vain enough, nor base enough, to attempt a competition.

As in myself I was wholly devoid of passion, I had neither eyes nor apprehension for the discernment of her's. Though I had often seen, I seldom had any kind of converse with her; and where the head is engaged and in a manner absorbed by business, there is neither leisure nor room for love to enter the heart. On the other hand, a person affected can instantly penetrate the bosom of the party beloved, and there discern a vacant and insensible heart, as legibly as a priest of Isis could decypher hieroglyphics.

One day, as I happened to pass near her anti-chamber, I heard the warble, as I thought, of distant and ætherial music. I approached toward the sound; the door was on the jar, and gently opening it, I entered and stood behind her unperceived. She sat and sung to her lute. The words were Shakespear's, but sweetly set by herself. They expressed that passage in his play of Twelfth Night, where it is said of Viola, *She never told her love, but let concealment, like a worm i'th' bud, feed on*
her

her damask cheek, &c. Ah, how affectingly did her instrument answer to her voice, while she gently turned her sighs to the soft and melancholy cadences. My breast was so swelled by a mixture of anguish and compassion, that I could no longer wholly suppress a rising groan. Hereat she started and turned; and rising suddenly, her eyes shot fire, and her face glowed with indignation and resentment. But observing the tears that still trickled down my cheeks, her countenance was as suddenly changed into kindness, and she cast upon me a look of inexpressible complacence.

Ah, Mr. Harry, says she, I see, I see that you have a gentle and a kindred kind of heart; and that, if ever you happen to love, you will love with great tenderness.—Have you ever loved, Mr. Harry?—Indeed, madam, I cannot say; my commerce has been very little among the ladies. If I met love on my way, or even found it in my heart, perhaps I should not rightly know what to make of it. But, my Matilda, my charming sister, (your father has honoured me with the privilege of calling you by that dear, that tender name) why will you not entrust your best, your truest friend with the secret of your disquiet? whoever the object of your esteem may be, I here solemnly engage, at the risque of my life and the loss of my fortune, to bring him voluntarily to pay his vows at your feet. O, my sister, I would to heaven that he had now been present, as I have been present, to have his soul melted and minted as mine has been; his heart must have been harder than the stones of Thebes, if you did not attract it and move it, at pleasure; by the touch of those fingers, and the bewitchment of those accents.—Ah, you flatterer, she cried, with a voice tuned to harmony, and a face formed of smiles, you almost tempt me to tell you what, for the world, I would not wish that any one in the world should know.

know. But I must snatch myself from the danger.—So saying, and casting at me a vanishing glance, she was out of sight in an instant.

As our suitors had now been dismissed, and our assemblies discontinued, Miss Golding seemed quite pleased with our domestic quiet; it gave us frequent occasions of being together; and I endeavoured, by a variety of tender offices and little amusements, to dispel or divert the melancholy under which I thought she laboured. I was greatly surprised at my own success on this occasion; her cheerfulness returned; she discovered new and striking graces in her manners and conversation, and in a little time did not appear to want any consolation.

One day, being on the Exchange, I was accosted by a Jew, who told me that he wanted a sum of money, and would either sell or pawn to me a jewel of great price; it was a solitaire composed of oriental pearls, with a diamond of the first water and magnitude in the centre: after some chaffering, we agreed for three thousand pieces, and I put it into my pocket-book. As my business detained me on the Exchange till it was late, I dined with two or three acquaintances at the chop-house, and did not return, till the evening was advanced.

On my entering, I was told that Mr. Golding was abroad, and that Miss Matilda had just ordered coffee for some ladies in her dressing-room. Immediately I ran up and opened the door without ceremony, but was instantly struck with the look which she turned toward me, a look that at once intimated dejection and disgust. During coffee, I endeavoured to behave with my usual unconcern, but found it impossible to avoid sharing in that constraint under which Miss Matilda most evidently laboured: in short, a gloomy stiffness spread through the whole conversation, and I believe no
two

two persons in company were rightly satisfied with each other.

As soon as the cups were removed, the fair visitors got up; and as Miss Golding pressed them to stay, in a manner that rather denoted her desire of their absence, they feigned a further engagement, and very formally took their leave.

When she had seen them to the door, and that I had handed them into their carriages, she turned without speaking to me, and withdrew toward her own apartment. I followed, and as she was about to enter, My Matilda, my sister, said I, with a voice of cordial tenderness, do your Harry the favour to accept this trifle, as an instance of my regard for the daughter of my friend, for the dearest object, upon earth, of my esteem and affection. So saying, I presented her with my recent purchase: she did not, however, even deign to look at it; but surveying me from head to foot with an eye of strange passions, she took it and dashed it against the floor; and rushing into her chamber, she shut to the door upon me, without speaking a word.

I stood in an inconceivable astonishment and concern. In vain I searched and researched my memory, for the recollection of some instance wherein I might have offended her; but not presuming to obtrude upon her, in order to question or expostulate with her, I retreated to my apartment under the deepest dejection of spirits.

Mr. Golding did not return till it was late in the evening. He immediately sent for me. Harry, says he, what is the matter, has any thing happened amiss? I never saw you look so discomposed. Indeed, Sir, I am not as well as I could wish. Bless me, we had better send for a doctor. No, Sir, I am in hopes it will soon be over.—Where is Matilda?—In her chamber, Sir, I believe—He then called Mrs. Susan, and bid her tell Matilda that

that he desired to speak with her ; but she answered that her mistress was gone to bed indisposed, and requested that she might not be disturbed.

Supper being served up, we sat down in silence ; and as neither of us offered to taste a bit, I rose, wished Mr. Golding a good night, and retired to my chamber.

After a sleepless night, my servant entered in a visible alarm, and told me that Miss Golding was extremely ill, and that almost all the physicians in London had been sent for.

Very unhappy were many succeeding days. I saw my friend, my father, the man I loved above the world, I saw him in a depth of distress that bordered on distraction, and I found my heart wrung with inexpressible anguish.

Though I was constant in my enquiries after Miss Golding, yet I purposely avoided appearing in her presence, lest the sight of one so obnoxious should add to her distemper. At length the good old man came to me, wringing his hands, Will you not go, Harry, says he, will you not go and see Matilda before she dies ? The doctors tell me they have tried all the powers of medicine, but that they do not yet know what to make of her sickness.

My dear Sir, said I, it is then no longer time to conceal from you what I know or conjecture concerning this matter. Miss Matilda, herself, entrusted me with the secret, but under the strictest injunctions of silence ; the extremity of her case, however, ought to dispense with all such engagements. Your daughter loves, Sir, she loves with passion ; but who the object of her affection is, I cannot imagine. Let it be your part to discover what she so industriously hides from the world ; she will refuse nothing to the authority, or rather to the tenderness of such a parent.

Here

Here Mr. Golding left me, but returned in about an hour. His whole frame seemed to labour with something extraordinary. You were right, Harry, he cried, you were right in your conjectures; my prayers and my tears have at length prevailed, with difficulty I have wrung the secret from her. O, my son! it is greatly in your power to befriend us. Would you not do something for the relief of a family, who doat upon you as we do; would you not do something for your old friend, who loves you as fondly as ever father loved a child? Something for you, Sir, said I? yes, every thing, all things that are possible to be done. But, pray Sir, do I know the party? You do, Harry, you do, he cried; for, as the prophet said unto David, thou art the man!

Me, Sir! I exclaimed, impossible! she cannot bear my sight, she hates me, she detests the ground I go upon. Not so, said he, not so, she loves the very dust upon which you tread. Something surely is due in mitigation of the calamities which you have occasion. We lie at your mercy, Mr. Clinton, my precious daughter and myself; it is yours to bid us live or die at your pleasure, to crush us into nothing, or to restore us to existence, to health to enjoyment. Will it hurt you, my son, to do us these great benefits? is it a matter grievous to give happiness to those, whose excess of love to you is their only misfortune? A princely fortune attends you. We and all we have are yours, Mr. Clinton. We are desirous of depending on your bounty alone. Let the extremeness of my daughter's affection for you excite something more kindly than hatred in your breast. If not for her sake, yet for mine my beloved Harry, let me beseech you to constrain yourself before her, to affect some little tenderness, some appearance of regard, that may revive her, a while at least, from the deplorable state under which she languishes.

While he spoke, I was agitated by unutterable emotions, and he might have proceeded much further, before I should have had the power to reply. At length I cast myself on my knee, and catching his hand to my bosom, Ah, my friend, my father, my dear father, I cried, am I then no better than a barbarian in your sight? To me would you impute such sentiments of cruelty and ingratitude? Take my hand, Sir, take my heart, dispose of them as you please. All that I have, and all I am, is yours and your daughter's, without any kind of reserve for any other person breathing.

The good man caught me in his arms, and pressed me to his breast in a long and speechless ecstasy; then, taking me by the hand, he led me in silence to his daughter's apartment.

As we entered she turned her eyes toward the door, and her pale and languid countenance was straight suffused with a short-lived red. I was so affected by the condition in which I beheld her, that I scarcely was able to reach her bed-side, where, kneeling down, I gently took one of her hands, and pressing it between mine, I bathed it in a silent shower of tears.

Ah, my papa, she faintly cried, I fear you have betrayed me: Mr. Clinton is certainly informed of my weakness. I am informed, said I, my lovely, my all beloved sister, I am informed that I am permitted to hope for a happiness that is infinitely above my merit; but it shall be the delightful business of my life to deserve it.

My dear, said Mr. Golding, I perceive you are something flustered; your constitution is too weak for such emotions as these. For the present, your brother Harry must leave you. To-morrow, I trust, you will be better able to support our company.

Hereupon I took her hand, and impressing upon it a tender and warm kiss, I just ventured to look up,

up, and saw her fine eyes suffused with a glittering tear, and her countenance bent upon me with a look of indescribable sweetness and delight; but Mr. Golding, to prevent the effects of too tender a scene, instantly took me by the arm and led me away.

As he perceived that my spirits had been much disturbed, he ordered a bottle to his own chamber, and told me that he requested some further converse with me. As soon as we had taken our seats, he looked earnestly upon me, then seized me by the hand, and looked at me again. But suddenly getting up he turned and stepped to the window, and breaking into tears, he there wept and sobbed for good part of an hour.

As soon as he was somewhat composed, he resumed his seat. Mr. Clinton, says he, are you really sincere in your professions with respect to my daughter? Shall I be rid of my doubts at once? May I venture to ask you a question, on which my own life as well as that of my child may depend? Should it please the Almighty to raise her from her present bed of sickness, is it actually your intention to make her your wife.

Here I demanded with some warmth, Is that a question, Sir, at this time? What reason have I given you to suspect my honour or my truth?—I do not suspect you, my Harry, I do not suspect you; I know you would not deceive me, but you may have deceived yourself. Your nature is tender, and full of pity, and in the deplorable state in which my girl lies, your great compassion may have easily been mistaken by you for love. Your friendship for me also may have helped to impose upon you, and you may have construed your regard and attachment to the father into a sentiment of tenderness and affection for the child. But O, my Harry, should any other woman be preferable in your eyes; or

should it not be in my girl's power to win and wear your affections, I shall then have been instrumental in making you wretched; and my heart may as well be broken the one way as the other.

———No, my father, no. I have no foreign Delilahs, no secret amours, no pleasures that shun the light. My heart is a virgin heart, and my Matilda possesses it without a rival.

From the time that I was sensible of my father's partiality, a little matter of ambition, whether laudable or otherwise, incited me to attempt a distinction that would raise me toward a level with an only brother, who looked down with neglect and contempt upon me. Thence I became indefatigable in my studies at school and college, as also in my application under you, Sir, during the first years of my apprenticeship, and this left me no manner of leisure for female attachments. Indeed I dreaded the appearance of any advances from the sex, and turned from them as I would from so many gins or pit-falls purposely dug for my destruction. My conversation, Sir, has been very little among the fair; and, excepting my natural propensity to the sex, I never, till very lately, conceived a liking for any woman. In truth, my dear father, that lady is not alive whom my judgment or inclinations would prefer to your Matilda. You need not fear my being wretched, I think myself most happy in her affections.

Then, said he, I pronounce her the happiest of women. And now, my Harry, I will tell you a secret. From the first time that I beheld you, I wished you for my daughter; I wished that she might have charms to attract and fix your heart; but as I feared, and was persuaded that this was not the case, I forbore to indulge myself in such flattering expectations. You know I never took you with me to see her at the boarding school; the true reason was, that I dreaded exposing her young and inexperienced heart to such a temptation, lest she

she should conceive and languish under a hopeless passion.

On her return to town, my apprehensions on your score, were much abated, as I imagined that the great number of her gay and glittering suitors would divide or at least divert her attention from you; and I purposely laid all the business of our house on your shoulders, that she might have as little of your company as possible.

I further had the precaution to warn my child against the danger of any affection for you. Matty, said I, one day, among all this assembly of fair and fortunate youths you are free and welcome to chuse your companion for life; there is only one who stands excepted; one only whom you must not look upon with an eye of expectation. Who is that, papa? My young brother and partner in trade, said I. He looks much higher, Matty, than to the daughter of a merchant. His prospects are immense. He is only brother and heir to the earl of Moreland, who is now on his travels, a dissolute young man, whose vices in all likelihood will quickly carry him off; and in such a case, our Harry Clinton would be considered as the first person in the land.

Ah! Sir, I cried, I may bless your prohibition with regard to me; it was certainly the happy, the only cause of my Matilda's partiality in my favour. The good man smiled and proceeded. Notwithstanding what I said to Matty, I had not given up all thoughts of you myself. While she talked or sung in your presence, I often turned my eye upon you, and thought, at times, that I perceived a growing tenderness in your behaviour, which further acquaintance, I trusted, might ripen into love. But when, in order to try you, I proposed your advocacy in behalf of Spelling, and that you appeared to undertake it with readiness and pleasure, I at once dropped all my fond and flattering hopes concerning you, and I heartily wished that my
child

child had accepted that modest and worthy young man. Blessed, however, be the favouring hand of that providence who, so unexpectedly, hath conducted matters to the issue of this hour, and fulfilled the capital wish of my life. But I will no longer delay carrying to my dear child the glad tidings of your affections; it will prove the best of balms to her wounded mind, and will close her eyes, for this night, in rest and peace of heart.

I was scarce dressed the next morning, when Matilda's favourite maid entered my chamber and bid me good-morrow. Mrs. Susan, said I, your pleasant countenance bids me presume that Miss Golding is better.—O, vastly better, vastly better, Sir, I assure you; she slept sweetly all the night, and did not want for happy dreams neither, I warrant.—Here is something for your good news.—No Sir, no, I never take money from gentlemen; my mistress's generosity does not leave me to the temptation. I love my mistress, Sir, and I think we ought all rather to join and see you, as well for yesterday's visit, as for another which I hope you will pay her to-day. A fiddle for these old doctors, one pretty young doctor is better worth than a score of them.—Susan, as it should seem, had been an observer, and did not want for penetration in such matters.—Mr. Harry, she continued, I'd give my last quarter's wages to know what charm it is that you carry about you, to make all the pretty ladies so fond of you.—In truth, Mrs. Susan, I am equally a stranger to the charm and to the fondness that you talk of.—Don't tell me, Sir, don't tell me. The very day of that night on which my mistress fell sick, here was a lady in her chariot to enquire for you, one of the loveliest young creatures I ever set my eyes on. I know she asked very particularly and very affectionately for you; for though it was my mistress to whom she spoke, I stood within hearing.—

ing.—It must, I cried, have been some mistake, or some imposture; for I assure you, Mrs. Susan, that I know of no such person. But pray, be so good as to bear my compliments to your lady, and tell her I wait her permission to attend her.

I forgot to tell you, madam, that, agreeable to the advice which Mr. Golding had given me, I went to felicitate my uncle Goodall on his marriage with your mother. He had already been informed of my recent admission into partnership. and thereupon received me with very unusual marks of esteem and affection.

Your mother, at that time was exceeding lovely in her person and manners. At every season of leisure I frequented their house, and she conceived a very tender and warm friendship for me; but during Miss Golding's illness, I had not been to visit them.

Susan was but just gone, when Mr. Golding came and told me that he believed his Matty would be pleased to see me. I instantly obeyed the summons. As I entered, I observed that she sat up in her bed; a morning gown was wrapped about her, and Susan with the help of pillows supported her behind. On my appearing, her spirits again took the alarm. She scarce ventured a glance toward me. I was greatly pained by the abashment under which I saw she laboured, and I hastened to relieve myself as well as her from the distress.

I sat down by the bed-side, and gently taking one of her hands, without looking in her face, my dear Miss Golding, said I, I hope you will not be jealous of your papa's affection for me. He has, indeed, been too partial, too generous toward me, and has approved himself more than a father to me. He is not satisfied with allowing me to call you by the tender name of sister; he further gives me leave to hope, that I may be united to you by the nearest and dearest of all ties. Nothing but your consent
is

is wanting, my sister, to make me the happiest of mankind. You are silent, my Matilda; may I venture to call you mine?—Blessed be your silence, my angel, I will dare then to interpret it in my own favour.—Indeed, I should long since have made the present declaration, I should long since have avowed my inclinations, my affections, my passion for you; but I did not presume to listen to my own heart on the occasion, I did not suffer it to tell me how much you were beloved. Amidst so many suitors of the first rank and merit, who were justly called together by your numberless attractions, I deemed it a flight by much too high for me to aspire at a competition for the happiness of your hand.

Here venturing to look up, I perceived that she had put her handkerchief to her eyes. Ah! Mr. Clinton, she cried with a trembling voice, you are very delicate, you are sweetly delicate indeed; but ought I to take the advantage of this delicacy? I see that you would save me from the confusion of an avowal, you would save me from the mortifying sensibility of my own weakness. But, Sir, you ought not to esteem that a weakness in me, which I account my chiefest merit, and which is my chiefest pride. I am proud of my gratitude, I am proud of my discernment. From the moment that you preserved me, against arms and against odds, at the great peril of your own life, in you, and you alone, I saw every thing that was amiable, every thing that was excellent. But then I dreaded lest all women should behold you with my eyes; and above all, I doubly dreaded and was fearfully assured, that you never would have any eyes or attention for me. You have at length seen, or are rather informed concerning my malady. You pity me, you wish to relieve me, and you would love me if you could. It is enough, Mr. Harry; even this perhaps is quite as much of happiness as I can bear.

Here

Here again, I began to profess and to protest the sincerity and ardour of my affections; but she cut me short and said, I know your sincerity, Sir, you are persuaded that you love me, because as yet you know not what love is. True love, Mr. Harry, by its own light, sees into and throughout the bosom of the party beloved: I am very sensible of the tenderness of your friendship for me, and that sensibility constitutes the whole of my happiness. I trust also, that it is all the happiness I shall ever desire. To see you, to hear you, to have you with me, to gaze upon you while you are looking another way, to be permitted to attend, to serve you, to conduce to your satisfactions, it is a lot that will lift me above that of mortality, that will cause me to account myself the first among women.

Ah, I cried, can I say nothing, can I do nothing to convince you, how dear, how exceedingly dear you are to me? I certainly loved you long before I knew what it was to be a lover. I now feel the united force of those imperceptible degrees by which the pleasing intruder daily stole and grew upon me. Believe me, my Matilda, when I presumed to present you with this as a token of my affection, I held it for a trifle altogether unworthy of you; accept it, however, I beseech you, for the sake of the giver.

And is this the gem, says she, which I cast from me with such disdain?—Forgive me, my brother; it is just so that the world casts from them the pearl of much mightier price. I would to heaven, that I could reject all the pomps, pleasures and vanities of this transitory world, with the same aversion that I spurned from me this estimable jewel! but there is very little hope of that, Mr. Harry, while you yourself may be partly numbered among transitory things.

Here I was quite overcome by the affection of the dear girl, and, urged on by a sudden transport,

I caught her to my bosom with a force that was something too much for her weakness. On recollection, I attempted to apologize for my indiscretion; but she sweetly cried, Ah! Mr. Harry, never repent of such faults; may I often, may I daily tempt you to be guilty of them. But tell me, and tell me truly Mr. Clinton; these gems, when you first purchased them, were they actually intended for me? were they not rather intended for your Fanny, for your own Fanny, Mr. Clinton? What can you mean? I exclaimed, I know of no Fanny in the universe with whom I have any acquaintance. That is strange! she replied, very extraordinary indeed! but, lest you should think me of a jealous or whimsical temper, I will relate the affair to you precisely as it happened.

On the day in which I took to my bed, I was looking out at the parlour window, when a chariot and six horses whirled up to our door. I observed a single lady in it, whom I supposed of my acquaintance, and instantly sent Susan to request her to walk in. On her entering, I was greatly struck by the beauty of her figure, and eyed her very inquisitively from head to foot. Having curtsied gracefully to me, can you tell me, miss, said she, is Mr. Clipton at home? No, indeed, madam, said I, but if you will be pleased to entrust me with your commands——It is only, miss, that I request to see him as soon as possible——And, pray, madam, where shall he attend you?—O, he will know that instantly, when you tell him it was Fanny Goodall, his own Fanny Goodall who was here to wait upon him.——Good heaven, I cried out, my aunt, my aunt, my aunt Goodall, my very aunt I assure you!——What do you say, what do you tell me, your aunt, Sir, can it be? Ah, she is too young and too lovely to be an aunt, Mr. Harry.—The very same, indeed, madam, there is no other Fanny Goodall. I admit, as you say, that she is young
and

and exceedingly lovely ; but still she is a wife, and likely soon, as I think, to be a mother. Alas, says my Matilda, what a doleful jest is this ! a cruel aunt she has been to me, I am sure ; what days of sighs and nights of tears she has cost me ! Ah, that heart-breaking term, " his own, his own Fanny ;" I think I shall never be able to forgive her that expression !

As Mr. Golding just then entered, we dropped the subject we were upon. Why Matty, says he, you are quite another creature : I think I never saw you wear so happy a face. I know you are come to chide me, says she, for keeping your partner from business ; but pay me down the portion you intended for me, papa, and I will reimburse you the damage of every hour of his absence. Yes, my love, cries the tender father, if wealth might serve for wages to a heart like that of my Harry, he shall be very amply paid for every act and instance of his affection and attention to you. Every hour of my life, I cried, is already her due ; she has nothing to pay to one who is her debtor beyond account.

During several following days. Miss Golding recovered with amazing rapidity. In less than five weeks she looked plumper and fairer than ever : peace smiled in her countenance ; joy laughed in her eyes ; her whole frame appeared as actuated by some internal music. And thus, all lovely and beloved, she was given up to my arms, in the presence of my uncle and aunt and a few city friends.

FRIEND. As I wish that none of your faults should pass by me unnoticed, so I am willing to allow you all your just praises. Your story of your old friend is, hitherto, very simple, natural, and domestic ; and to a mind yet undebauched, exceedingly interesting and affecting ; for it opens and investigates a number of little passages and mazes
in

in the heart, which are quite closed, or imperceptible to persons of hard nerves and callous conceptions. I am free, however, to tell you, that I felt myself offended by the compliments which Mr. Clinton pays to himself through the mouth of your Matilda. It is, indeed, a very rare matter for people to speak of themselves with due decency and delicacy. I wish you could have procured some other conduit for conveying to us the history of your knight. Cæsar, I think, is the only person who, with an easy though modest confidence, has successfully adventured on a detail of his own exploits.

AUTHOR. I have not a word to say in Mr. Clinton's defence; perhaps he may offer something for himself on the occasion.

C H A P. XIV.

HERE the countess, for the first time, broke in upon her cousin's narration. Happy Matilda, she cried, how distinguished was thy destiny! were it but for a year, were it but for a day, for that day thou didst yet enjoy the consummation of all thy wishes, a lot rarely allowed to any daughter of Adam! I was not then born to envy her state. Sweet girl! she deserved you; she was after my own heart; the excess of her passion for you made her truly worthy of you. But tell me, my cousin,
how

how could you be so long ignorant of the dear girl's affection for you? The language of love is so very intelligible, so expressive through every motion and every organ, as must, with sufficient clearness, have opened your eyes to the object. Indeed, madam, replied Mr. Clinton, she herself led me away from any such apprehensions, by drawing so many pictures of the man whom she said she loved, all copied from the creature of her own brain, and covered and disguised with such imaginary excellencies, as must have prevented myself, as well as every one living, from perceiving therein the smallest trace of my own resemblance. Do not tell me, cried lady Maitland, she was a true and a sweet painter; and I should have known you by her portrait in the midst of a million. But proceed, I beseech you; my whole soul is in your story.

Within a few months after my marriage, continued Mr. Clinton, you, my cousin, first opened your fair eyes to the light, and my Matty and I had the honour of being your sponsors.

Within the first year of my marriage, my girl, also, brought a son into the world, and within the two years following was delivered of a daughter.

The joy of the grandfather, on those events, was indescribable. Alas, good man! he thought that he perceived, in their infant aspects, a thousand happy promises and opening prospects. He saw himself, as it were, perpetuated in a descending and widening progeny, who, like their native Thames, should roll down in a tide of expanding wealth and prosperity. He wanted that all the world should participate of his happiness; and our house once more became the house of festivity.

A number of external successes, also, assisted to persuade us, in those days, that felicity was to be attained and ascertained upon earth. The regency of Cromwell was administered with the strictest justice

at

at home, while, at the same time, it became revered and formidable abroad, and extended its influence to regions the most remote. Under the protection of the British flag, we sent our ships out to the East and to the West, and wealth came pouring in upon us from all quarters of the globe.

In the mean while, my wife and I lived together in perfect harmony. Though my commerce and acquaintance was greatly extended, I had yet formed no friendships from home, that partook of heart-felt tenderness, except for your mamma. All my pleasures and desires, all my world was, in a manner, confined and absorbed within the compass of my own walls. In the good old man and his daughter, and in the pledges of their endearing attachment to me, every wish that my soul could form was centered. Mutual joy sat round our board, mutual peace prepared our pillows: and, during a swimming period of six years, I scarce remember to have experienced the smallest discontent, save what arose from the inordinancy of my wife's affection for me.

While she continued to bless my arms, I thought that no one had ever loved with greater warmth than I loved her; and yet, at times, I remarked a very striking difference between the manner and effects of our feelings for each other. If business detained me an hour extraordinary abroad, the panting of her bosom, that eagerness of look with which she received me, was to me a painful evidence of her anxiety during my absence. One evening I found her in fainting fits, merely because she was told that a duel had just happened between lord Mohun and a person who had much the resemblance of her Clinton. In short, if my head or my finger ached, I found myself under the necessity of concealing my ailment, and of assuming a cheerfulness disagreeable to the occasion, to prevent the worse consequences of her ready alarms.

larms. On the other hand, my affection was tranquil and serene; it was tender and fervent, indeed, but without tumult or disturbance; a species of love which I afterwards found to be by far the most eligible; for every kind of passion is unquestionably a kind of suffering: love in God, therefore, must be wholly an action; it acts infinitely upon others without any possibility of being acted upon.

Thus the years of my life moved onward upon down, when the small-pox, that capital enemy to youth and beauty, became epidemical in the city. Our children caught the contagion. All possible care was taken, and all possible art employed. A number of physicians was kept constantly about them. Fifteen days of their illness were already elapsed, and the doctors pronounced them out of danger; when the distemper took a sudden and malignant turn, and in one and the same minute, both my babes expired in the arms of their mother.

I was in the room at the time; and as I knew the extreme tenderness of my Matty's nature, all my concern as well as attention was turned upon her. I took her fondly by the hand, and looking up to her face, I was instantly alarmed and shocked by that placid serenity which appeared in her countenance, and which I expected to be quickly changed into some frantic eruption. But first dropping a smiling tear on her infants, and then lifting her glistening eyes to heaven! I thank thee, I thank thee, O my master! she cried, thou hast made me of some use; I have not been born in vain; thou hast ordained me the humble vehicle of two safe and certain angels, living attendants on thy throne, and sweet singers of thy praises in the kingdom of little children, for ever and for ever. I have yet sufficient left, more blessings remaining than suit the lot of mortality! take me from them, I beseech

seech thee, whenever it is thy good pleasure; for I fear there are some of them, which I could not, I could bear to have taken away from me! So prayed the dear saint; and looking eagerly at me, No my Harry, she cried out, I fear, I fear I could not bear it! So saying, she suddenly cast herself into my bosom, and grasping at my neck, and gushing into a flood of anguish, we mingled our sobs and our tears together till no more were left to be shed.

You are affected my dearest cousin—I had better stop here. If you are moved by small matters, how would your heart be wrung by some ensuing distresses!—I must not venture to proceed.

Go on, cried the countess, go on, I insist upon it! I love to weep, I joy to grieve; it is my happiness, my delight, to have my heart broken in pieces.

We were both of us much relieved by the vent of our mutual passion; for though my wife still continued to keep to me and cling about me, she yet seemed to be sweetly composed, and sunk within my arms, as into a bed and depth of peace.

At length I listened to a kind of murmur and bustle in the hall, and I heard some one distinctly cry, O my master, my master!

We started up at the instant. Mr. Golding had been from home at the time of the deadly crisis of my two darling little ones; and had quieted all his fears and renewed all his prospects, in the view and full assurance of their life and quick recovery. We had been too much engaged and occupied in our own personal griefs, to give to our servants the seasonable precaution of breaking the matter to our father by unalarming degrees; and a rude fellow, at his entrance, bluntly told him that the children were both dead; whereupon he clapped his hands together, and casting himself into a chair, remained without sense or motion.

When

When we ran out, we were greatly terrified by the manner of his aspect: though his eyes were closed, his brows were gloomy and contracted, while the nether part of his face looked quiet and composed.

I instantly sent for a surgeon, and recalled the physicians who had but lately left us; while my Matty stood motionless, with her hands closed together, and her eyes fixed upon her father. At length she cried out, My papa, my papa, my dear papa, I would, I would I had died before I came to this hour! But, blessed be thy will, since it is thy will, O God! When all other props are sap-ped and plucked from under me, I trust to fall into thee, my Father which art in heaven!

Being put to bed, and bled, he recovered motion and speech, and we got him to swallow a composing draught, though he did not yet recollect any person or thing about him.

Notwithstanding our late fatigues, Matty and I sat up with him most of the night; and then ordering a pallet to be brought into the room, we lay down to take a little rest toward morning. Alas, said I to myself, how rich was I yesterday, and how is my world abridged! These narrow walls now contain all that is left me of all the possessions that I value upon earth.

Poor Mr. Golding was but ill qualified to bear calamity. His life had been a life of sound health and successes; and he never had been acquainted with sickness, or with affliction, save on the death of his wife whom he had married for money, and on the illness of his daughter as already related.

As he had taken an opiate, he did not awaken till it was late in the day. Turning his head toward me, Is it you, Harry, says he? how do you find yourself, Sir, said I?—Why, has any thing been the matter with me? Indeed I do not feel myself right; but send my children to me: send my
my

my Jacky and my little Harriet; the sight of them will be a restorative beyond all the cordials in the world.—You are silent, Harry,—What is the meaning?—O, now I begin to remember—my sweet babies, my little play-fellows, I shall never see you any more.

Here he burst into the most violent gust of passion. He groaned, he wept, he cried aloud with heart piercing exclamations; while I caught up Matty in my arms, and running with her to a distant apartment, caught a kiss, and locked her in.

I returned, but found him in the same violence of agitation. I spoke to him, I would have comforted him; but he cried, Be quiet, Harry, I will not be comforted. I will go to my children; they shall not be torn from me; we will die, we will be buried, we will lie in the same grave together.

As I found myself sick, and ready to faint under the oppression of his lamentations, I withdrew to the next chamber, and there plentifully vented the contagious shower.

After some time I listened, and perceived that all was quiet, and returning, I found him in a kind of troubled doze, from whence he fell into a deep and peaceful sleep. Thus he continued for three days, wailing and slumbering by fits, without tasting any matter of nourishment, though his daughter and I implored him on our knees, and with tears. No reasonings, no intreaties could avail for appeasing him; it was from the association of our sorrows alone that he appeared to admit of any consolation.

At length his passion subsided into a sullen and silent calm; he would speak to nobody, he would answer none of us except by monosyllables.

Within a few following weeks, news was brought me that our ship the Phoenix was arrived
in

in the Downs, safe and richly laden from the East Indies.

Immediately I carried the tidings to the old man, in the pleasing expectation that they would serve to divert, or, at least, to amuse his melancholy. But, fixing his look upon me, Wherefore, Harry, dost thou tell me of ships and Indies, he cried; both Indies are poor to me, they have nothing that they can send me. I have no road to go upon earth, no way upon sea to navigate; I am already become a wild and wasted Babylon, wherein the voice of music shall never more be heard. O ye old and unblest knees, where are now your precious babes, who were wont to play about ye, and to cling and climb upon ye? gone, gone, gone, gone, never, never to return!

Here, breaking into tears, I cried, We are both young yet, my father, we may yet have many children to be the comfort of your age. No, my Harry, no, he replied; you may, indeed, have many children, but you will never have any children like my darling children.

Mr. Golding, from this time, no more entered his counting-house, nor paid nor received visits, nor kept up any correspondence. Even my company and that of his daughter appeared to oppress him; and he rarely left his apartment, where an old folio bible was his only companion.

Hereupon I began to withdraw our effects from trade, and having called in the best part of them, I lodged near half a million in the Dutch funds. When I went to advise with my father on the occasion, What, my child, said he, what have I to say to the world, or to the things of the world? Do just as you please with the one, and with the other; and never consult a person on any affair wherein the party consulted has no interest or concern.

One

One morning, as I lay in bed, Matty threw her arms about me, and hiding her blushing face in my bosom, My Harry, says she, if you could handsomely bring it about to my poor papa, perhaps it would be some matter of consolation to him to know that I am with child.

When I broke the matter to him, he did not, at first, appear to be sensibly affected; in time, however, the weight of his affliction seemed considerably lightened, and as my wife advanced in her pregnancy, he began to look us in the face, he sat with us at one table, and became conversable as formerly.

One day I went to dine with Mr. Settle, a hardware merchant, who had appointed to pay me a large sum of money. On my return in the evening, through Moorfields, attended only by my favourite Irishman, a very faithful and active fellow, though it was yet fair day, I was suddenly set upon by a posse of robbers, who rushed on me from behind a cover. The first of them, running up, fired directly in my face, but did me no further damage than by carrying away a small piece of the upper part of my left ear. Had the fools demanded my money, I would have given it to them at a word; but finding them bent on murder, I resolved that they should have my life at as dear a rate as possible. I instantly drew my sword, and run the first through the body; and then, rushing on the second assailant, I laid him also on the ground, before he had time to take his aim, so that his pistol went harmlessly off in his fall.

In the mean while, my brave and loving companion was not idle; with two strokes of his oaken cudgel he had levelled two more of them with the earth. Hereupon the remainder halted, retreated into a group, and then stood and fired upon us altogether; but observing that we did not drop, they cast their arms to the ground, and run off several ways
as

as fast as they could. My good friend, Tirlah O'Donnoh, then turned affectionately to me; Are you hurt, my dear master, says he? I believe I am, Tirlah; let us make home the best we can. O, cried the noble creature, if no body was hurt but Tirlah, Tirlah wou'dn't be hurt at all.

Here, taking me under the arm, we walked slowly to the city, till coming to a hackney coach he put me, tenderly, into it, and sitting beside me, supported me, as I began to grow weak through much effusion of blood.

As soon as we got home, the coachman, as is their practice, thundered at the door, and my Matty, according to custom whenever I was abroad, was the readiest of all our domestics to open.

By this time I had fainted, and was quite insensible; but when my tender and true mate saw me borne by two men into her presence, all pale and bloody, she, who thought she had fortitude to support the wreck of the world, gave a shriek that was enough to alarm the neighbourhood, and instantly falling backward, got a violent contusion in the hinder part of her head.

Immediately we were conveyed to separate beds, and all requisite help was provided. It was found that I had received six or seven flesh-wounds, but none of them proved dangerous, as they were given at a distance, and by pistol-shot. But alas! my Matty's case was very different; she fell into sudden and premature labour, and having suffered extreme anguish all the night, during which she ceased not to enquire after me, she was with difficulty delivered of a male infant, who was suffocated in the birth.

In the mean while the good and tender-hearted old gentleman hurried about incessantly, from one of us to the other, wringing his hands, and scarcely retaining his senses.

As

As soon as my wounds were dressed, and I had recovered my memory, I looked about and hastily enquired for my wife; but they cautiously answered me, that she was something indisposed with the fright which she got at seeing me bloody, and that her father had insisted on her going to bed.

On the second dressing of my wounds, I was pronounced out of danger, and then they ventured to tell me of my Matty's miscarriage, and of the bruise which she had got in her fall when she fainted. On hearing this my heart was cleft, as it were, in twain; I accused myself of the murder of my wife and infant; and I accused all, without exception, of their indiscretion in not concealing my disaster from her.

At times I began to fear that my wife was either dead, or much worse than they represented. On my third dressing, therefore, I peremptorily insisted on my being carried into her chamber. I sent her notice of my visit, and on entering the room, He lives then, she cried, my husband, my Harry lives! it is enough; I shall die happy, I shall now depart in peace.

Here I ordered myself to be laid by her side, when taking a hand, which she had feebly reached out, and pressing it to my lips, You would forsake me then, my Matty? you die, you say; and you die happy, in leaving me the most wretched, the most desolate of men. You die, my love, you die; and I, who would have fostered you and your babe with my vitals, it is I who have dug a grave for the one and for the other. But, you must not forsake me, my Matty; I will not be forsaken by you; since we cannot live asunder, let us die, let us die together.

Here, a passionate silence ensued on either part. But my wounds growing painful, and beginning to bleed afresh, I was obliged to be carried back to my own apartment.

Within

Within a few days more I was so well recovered as to be able to walk about; from which time I was a constant attendant on my beloved, and became her most tender and assiduous nurse keeper.

You must have heard, my cousin, that the customs and manners of those times were altogether the reverse of what they are at present. Hypocrisy is no longer a fault among men; all now is avowed libertinism and open profaneness; and children scoff at the name and profession of that religion which their fathers revered. On the contrary, in those days, all men were either real or pretended zealots; every mechanic professed, like Aaron, to carry a Urim and Thummim about him; and no man would engage in any business or bargain, though with an intent to over-reach his neighbour, without going apart, as he said, to consult the Lord.

My Matty, at the same time, was the holiest of all saints, without any parade of sanctification. Her's was a religion, of whose value she had the daily and hourly experience; it was indeed a religion of power. It held her, as on a rock, in the midst of a turbulent and fluctuating world: it gave her a peace of spirit that smiled at provocation: it gave her comfort in affliction, patience in anguish, exaltation in humiliation, and triumph in death.

In about five weeks after her unhappy miscarriage, she appeared on the recovery, though by very slow degrees, and with assistance, at times, sat up in her bed; when her oldest physician one morning called me apart, I am loth, Sir, said he, very loth to acquaint you with my apprehensions. I wish I may be mistaken; but I fear greatly for you, I fear that your dear lady cannot recover. By the symptoms, I conjecture that an abscess, or imposthume, is forming within her? but a few days will ascertain matters either for us or against us.

Had

Had all sorts of evil tidings come crowding one upon another, I should not have been affected as I then was affected. I could not rise from my seat to bid the doctor adieu. My knees trembled under me; a swimming came before my eyes; and a sudden sickness relaxed and reversed my whole frame. Alas, I had not, at that time, the resource of my Matty; I had not on the armour with which she was armed to all issues and events. I however raised my thoughts to Heaven, in a kind of helpless acquiescence rather than confident resignation. I struggled not to appear weaker than became my manhood; and I said to myself, doctors have often been mistaken.

Having recollected my strength and spirits the best I could, I ventured to enter my wife's apartment. She was just raised in her bed, from whence her pale and emaciated countenance looked forth, as the sun, toward his setting, looks through a sickly atmosphere, in confidence of his arising in the fulness of morning glory.

Having cautiously and dejectedly seated myself beside her, she reached out both her hands; and, pressing one of mine between them, I love you no longer, my Harry, she cried; I love you no longer. Your rival, at length, has conquered, I am the bride of another. And yet I love you in a measure, since in you I love all that is him, or that is his: and that I think is much, a great deal, indeed, of all that is lovely. O, my dear, my sweet, mine only enemy, as I may say! riches were nothing unto me, pleasures were nothing unto me, the world was nothing unto me! You, and you only, Harry, stood between me and my heaven, between me and my God. Long, and often, and vainly, have I strove and struggled against you; but my bridegroom at length is become jealous of you; my true owner calls me from you, and takes me all to himself! Be not alarmed then, my Harry,

ry, when I tell you that I must leave you. You will grieve for me, you will grieve greatly for me, my beloved ! but give way to the kindly shower that your Lord shed for his Lazarus, and let the tears of humanity alleviate and lighten the weight of your affliction.—Ah, my Harry, I tremble for you; what a course you have to run!—what perils ! what temptations !—Deliver him from them, my Master, deliver him from them all !—Again, what blissful prospects——they are gone, they are vanished !——I sink, I die under the weight and length of succeeding misery !—Again it opens ; all is cleared ; and his end, like that of Job, is more blessed than his beginning—Ah, my Harry, my Harry, your heart must be wrung by many engines ; it shall be tried in many fires ; but I trust it is a golden heart, and will come forth with all its weight !

You have been dreaming, my love, I said, you have been dreaming ; and the impression still lies heavy and melancholy on your memory.

Yes, she replied, I have been dreaming indeed ; but then my dreams are much more real than my waking visions. When all things sensible are shut out, it is then that the spirit enlarges, grows conscious of its own activity, its own power and presence, and sees by a light whose evidence is beyond that of the sun.

O, my angel, I cried, should any thing happen to you——But, I dare not look that way ; for I know, I find, I feel that I could not survive you !

You must survive me, my Harry ! nay, you will once more be married. I beheld your bride last night. Even now she stands before me, the sister of my spirit, and one of the loveliest compositions of sin and death, that ever was framed for dissolution. Her also you will lose ; and you will think, nay, you will assure yourself, that no powers in heaven or earth can avail for a ray of comfort.

In this life, however, you will finally, unexpectedly, and most wonderfully be blessed; and, soon after, we shall all meet, and be more intimately and more endearingly wedded than ever, where yet there is neither marrying nor giving in marriage.

While she yet spoke, her pains, as the pains of labour, again came upon her, and went off, and again returned, after intermitting swoonings.

O, my cousin, what a solemn, what a fearful thing is death! all our inlets of knowledge and sensation closed at once! the sound of cheer and the voice of friendship, and the comfort of light, shut out from us for ever! Nothing before us, but a blackness and depth of oblivion; or beyond it, a doubtful and alarming sensibility! strange scenes, and strange worlds, strange associates, and strange perceptions, perhaps of horrid realities, infinitely worse than non-entity? Such are the brightest prospects of infidelity in death!

Where, at that time, are your scoffers, your defiers of futurity? where your merry companions, who turn their own eternity into matter of laugh and ridicule? dejected and aghast, their countenance wholly fallen, and their heart sunk within them, they all tremble and wish to believe, in this the hour of dissolution. They feel their existence sapped and sinking from under them; and nature compels them, in the drowning of their souls, to cry out, to something, to any thing, Save, save, or I perish!

Far different was the state of my little and lowly Matty, my saint of saints, at that tremendous period! where all others would have sunk, there she soared aloft; and she dropped the world and its wealth, with her body and all the sensible affections thereof, with the same satisfaction, that a poor man, just come to a great estate, would drop his tattered garb to put on gorgeous apparel.

O, my

O, my beloved ! she would cry in the midst of her pains, I have been weakly through life, I have been weakness itself, and therefore not able to take up thy cross; but be thou strong in my weakness, shew thy mightiness in me, and then lay it upon me with all its weight !

Again, after a swoon, and when her pangs became excessive, I refuse not thy process, my Master, she cried ! Thy cross and thorny crown, they are all my ambition ! Point thy thorns, twist them harder, let them pierce into my soul ; so thou suffer me not to fail or fall from thee, I care not !

Think, my cousin, what I endured upon that occasion ; my rending heart shared her sufferings, and felt pang for pang. Nay, I was not far from murmuring and questioning with my God, on his putting to such tortures the most guiltless of his creatures. If the lambs of thy flock, I secretly said, if thy lambs are appointed to such excruciating sensations, what must be the portion of such sinners as I am ?

When she drew near the goal of her blessed course upon earth, O my almighty Samson ! she faintly cried, thou shakest the two pillars of my frail and sinful fabric ; finish then thy conquest in me ; down, down with the whole building appointed to ruin ! Let no one, O Lord, of mine enemies or of thine enemies escape thy victorious arm ! but slay all those by my death, with whom I have been vainly combating during my life-time ! So saying, her pains in an instant forsook her. The form of her countenance was suddenly changed from the expression of agony into that of ecstasy. She raised her hands on high, and exerting herself to follow them, she cried, I come, I come ! then sighed and dropped over.——The muscles of her face still retained the stamp of the last sentiment of her soul, and while the body hastened to

be mingled with earth, it seemed to partake of that heaven to which its spirit had been exalted.

You may think it odd, dearest madam, that, for some time past, I have taken no note of the man to whom I was tied by every possible band of duty, gratitude, and affection. The fact is, that, during the latter part of my wife's illness, and for some weeks after her death, Mr. Golding was confined to his chamber by a severe fit of the gout; and the acuteness of his pains scarce permitted him to attend to any other concern. While my Matty lived, therefore, I divided my time and assiduities as equally as I could between the daughter and father; and at any intervals of ease, I used to read to him his favourite passages in the bible.

As soon as my faint had expired, I charged the servants not to give any intimation of her death to their master; but alas! our silence and our looks were too sure indicators of the fatal tidings; for, from the highest to the least, my Matty had been the idol of the whole house, and her death appeared to them as the loss of every earthly possession.

Having looked, several times, intently and inquisitively in my face, Well, Harry, says Mr. Golding, all is over then, I see; we must go to her, but my child shall no more return to us.—You are silent, my Harry.—O thou fell glutton, death! I had but one morsel left for the whole of my sustenance, and that too thou hast devoured. Here he gave a deep groan, and sunk into a state of insensibility, from which, however, he was soon recovered by the return of an anguishing fit of the gout.

When I look back, my fair cousin, on the passages of my life; it is a matter of amazement to me, that a creature so frail, so feebly and so delicately constituted as man, with nerves so apt to be racked, and a heart to be wrung with anguish, can possibly

possibly endure under the weights of calamity, that, at times, are laid upon him.

I had not yet dropped a tear. I was in a state of half stupid and half flighty insensibility; as one who, having lost every thing, had nothing further to look for, and therefore nothing to regard. But when I saw my dear old man, my best friend, my father, whelmed under such a depth of affliction, all the sluices of my soul and inmost affections were laid open, and I broke into an avowed passion of tears and exclamations, till, like David in his strife of love with Jonathan, I exceeded. I accused myself of all the evils that had happened to his house; and I devoted the day to darkness, and the night to desolation, wherein, by my presence and connections, I had brought those mischiefs upon him. The good man was greatly struck, and, I think, partly consoled by the excess of my sorrows; and, all desolate as he was, he attempted to administer that comfort to me, which he himself wanted more than any who had life.

Break not your heart, my Harry, break not your heart, my child! he cried; deprive me not of the only consolation that is left me! you are now my only trust, my only stay, upon earth. A wretched merchant I am, whose whole wealth is cast away, save thee, thou precious casket, thou only remnant of all my possessions! my girl, indeed, was thy true lover, the tenderest of all mates; her love to thee, my son, was passing the love of woman; but we have lost her, we have lost her, and wailing is all the portion that is left us below.

As soon as the family heard the voice of our mourning, they too gave a loose to the impatience of their griefs, and all the house was filled with the sound of lamentation.

On the following day I summoned the chief medical artists, and got the precious remains of my

my angel embalmed. She was laid under a sumptuous canopy with a silver coffin at her bed's foot, and every night when the house was at rest, I stole secretly from my bed and stretched myself beside her. I pressed her cold lips to mine; I clasped her corpse to my warm bosom, as though I expected to restore it to life by transfusing my soul into it. I spoke to her as when living; I reminded her of the several tender and endearing passages of our loves; and I reminded her also of the loss of our little ones, by whom we became essentially one, inseparably united in soul and body for ever.

There is surely my cousin, a species of pleasure in grief, a kind of soothing and deep delight that arises with the tears which are pushed from the fountain of God in the soul, from the charities and sensibilities of the human heart divine.

True, true my precious cousin, replied the countess, giving a fresh loose to her tears—O Matilda, I would I were with thee!—true my cousin, I say; even now I sink, I die, under the pleasure of your narration.

Upon the ninth night, continued Mr. Clinton, as I lay by the side of all that remained of my Matty, overtoiled and overwatched, I fell into a deep sleep. My mind notwithstanding, at the time, seemed more awake and more alive to objects than ever. In an instant she stood visible and confessed before me, I saw her clearer than at noon-day, by the light which she cast with profusion abroad. Every feature and former trace seemed heightened into a lustre without a loss of the least similitude. She smiled ineffable sweetness and blessedness upon me: and stooping down I felt her embrace about my heart and about my spirit; while, at the same time, I saw her bent in complacence before me. After a length of ecstatic pleasure, which I felt from her communion and infusion into my soul;
My

My Harry, says she, grieve not for me ! all the delights that your world could sum up in an age, would not amount to my bliss, no, not for an hour ; it is a weight of enjoyment that, in an instant, would crush to nothing the whole frame of your mortality. Grieve not then for me, my Harry, but resign my beggarly spoils to their beggarly parent ; ashes to ashes, and dust to dust ! In my inordinate fondness for you, I have at length obtained a promise that my master and your master, my beloved and your lover shall, finally, bear you triumphant through all the enemies that are set in fearful array against you. Having so said, I felt myself as it were compressed within an engine of love ; and again, losing the remembrance of all that had passed, I sunk, as into a state of utter oblivion.

Toward the dawning, I was awakened by the clapping of hands and the cries of lamentation. Starting up, I perceived Mr. Golding at the bedside, suspended over his Matty and me, and pouring forth his complaints.

There was a favoured domestic of his, a little old man, who had always kept a careful and inquisitive eye over every thing that was in or concerned our household. This Argus, it seems, at length suspected my nightly visits to the dead, and lurking in a corner, saw me open and enter the chamber where the corpse was deposited. As he lay in his master's apartment, he took the first opportunity of his being awake to impart what he thought a matter of extraordinary intelligence to him. Sir, say he, if I am not greatly deceived, my young master is this moment in bed with his dead lady. What is this you tell me ? cried Mr. Golding. No, John, no, what you say is impossible. All who live, love that which is living alone ; whatever favours of death, is detestable to all men. As I am here, replied John, I am almost assured that

that what I tell you is fact. Peace, peace, you old fool, said Mr. Golding; think you that our Harry is more loving than father Abraham, and yet Abraham, desired to bury his dead out of his sight. I know not how that may be, said trusty John, but if you are able to stir, I will help you to go and see. I am sure the thought of it melts the very heart within me.

Accordingly, Mr. Golding, like old Jacob, strengthened himself and arose, and pained as he was, he came with the help of his John, to the place where I lay.

Having for some time looked upon me, as I slept with his Matty fast folded in my arms; he could no longer contain his emotions, but he and John broke forth into tears and exclamations. O my children, my children, my dearest children, he cried, why did ye exalt me to such a pitch of blessedness? was it only to cast me down into the deeper gulph of misery, a gulph that has neither bank nor bottom?

As I arose, all ashamed to be detected in that manner, the good man caught me in his arms. My Harry, my Harry, says he, what shall I pay you, my son, for your superabundant love to me and to mine? Could my wretchedness give you bliss, I should almost think myself blessed in being wretched, my Harry.

I now prepared to execute the late command of my angel, and to consign to earth the little that was earthly in her. But when our domestics understood that all that was left of their loved mistress was now going to be taken away from them for ever, they broke into tears anew, and set no bounds to their lamentations.

- Her desolate father was desirous of attending the funeral, but on my knees, I dissuaded him from it, as I was assured it would burst in twain the already over-stretched thread of his age
and

and infirmities. He then insisted on having the lid of the coffin removed, and bending over, he cast his old body on the corpse: again he rose and gazed upon it; and clapping his hands with a shout, Is this my world, he cried, the whole of my possessions? Are you the one that was once my little prattling Matty, the playfellow of my knees, the laughter away of care, who brought cheer to my heart and warmth to my bosom? Are you the one for whom, alone, I spent my nights in thought and my days in application? Is this all that is left, then, of my length of labours? O, my spark of life is quenched! in thee, my Matty, my Matty, the flowing fountain of my existence is dried up for ever.

There is something exceedingly solemn and affecting, my cousin, in the circumstances and apparatus of our funerals; they are oppressive even to minds that are no way concerned or interested in the death of the party lamented. Though I grieved no more for my Matty, though I was as assured of her bliss as I was of my own being; yet, when the gloom of the procession was gathered around me; when I heard the wailing of the many families whom her charity had sustained; when I heard the bitter sobbings of the servants, whom her sweetness had so endearingly attached to her person; when all joined to bewail themselves as lost in her loss; my heart died, as it were, within me, and I should have been suffocated on the spot, had I not given instant way to the swell of my sorrows.

The tempest of the soul, Madam, like that of the elements, can endure but for a season. The passion of Mr. Golding, on the interment of every joy and of every hope that he could look for upon earth, within a few weeks subsided, or rather sunk into a solid but sullen peace; a kind of peace

that seemed to say, there is nothing in this universe that can disturb me.

Harry, said he, one evening, I have been thinking of the vision that I have had. Vision, Sir, said I, has my Matty then appeared to you? Yes, he answered, she was the principal part of my vision for these twenty years past. The vision that I mean, my Harry, is the dream of a very long and laborious life. Here have I, by the toil of fifty years application, scraped together and accumulated as much as, in these times, would set kings at contention, and be accounted a worthy cause for spilling the blood of thousands; and yet what are these things to me, or of what value in themselves more than the stones and rubbish that make our pavement before the door? I have been hungering and thirsting after the goods of this world, I have acquired all that it could give me, and now my soul, like a sick stomach, disgorges the whole. I then took one of his hands, and pressing it tenderly between mine, O my father, I cried, my dear, dear father, O that I might be made sons and daughters, and every sort of kindred to you! all that I am and have should gladly be spent in bringing any kind of comfort to you my father.

In about a fortnight after, as I entered his apartment to bid him good-morrow, I observed that his countenance had much altered from what it was the evening before, that he looked deeply dejected, and seemed to breathe with difficulty.

Are not you well, Sir? No, says he, my spirits are greatly oppressed. I find that I must leave you shortly; I believe that I must go suddenly; but where to? That is the question, the very terrible question; the only question of any importance in heaven or on earth. Sure, Sir, said I, that can be no question to you, whose whole life has been a continual course of righteousness, of daily worship to God, and good will to all men. If you have
any

any sins to account for, they must be covered tenfold by the multitude of your charities.

Talk not, Harry, said he, of the filthy rags of my own righteousness. I am far from the confidence of the boastful Pharisee; alas, I have not even that of the poor and humble publican, for I dare not look up to say, "Lord, be merciful to me a sinner!" wherefore then do you speak of having finished my course toward God and toward man? It is but lately, very lately that I set out upon it, and I am cut short before I have got within sight of the goal. Yes, Harry, I fear, I know, I feel, that there is no salvation for me.

You amaze me, Sir, said I, you terrify me to death. If there is not salvation for such as you, what a depth of perdition opens for the rest of mankind?

I would you could convince me, he cried. I want to be comforted; I desire comfort, any kind of consolation: but I feel my condemnation within myself. Moreover, I see every text of the gospel of the words of life terribly marshalled and set in broad array against me. What text, Sir? said I; I am sure I know of no texts that bring terror or condemnation to the just. Ah, Harry, he replied, justice is of the law and the circumcision, and has nothing to do with the new covenant or the new man. For, what says the great apostle? "Circumcision availeth nothing, neither uncircumcision, but a new creature." And Christ himself hath said, "Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God." Again, the same apostle saith: "I delight in the law of God after the inward man;" and again, "My little children of whom I travail in birth again, until Christ be formed in you." Now if all these corresponding expressions of being "born again, a new creature, a new man, an inward man, Christ formed in us," &c. are to be glossed and explained away, as meaning

ing little more than a state of moral sentiments and moral behaviour, there can be nothing of real import in the gospel of Christ.

Again, hear what the Redeemer saith : " Except
" ye be converted and become as little children, ye
" shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven."
Again, " If any man will come after me, let him
" deny himself and take up his cross and follow
" me." Again, " Whosoever he be of you that
" forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my
" disciple."

If these things, I cried, are to be taken according to the apparent sense and import of the letter, neither the teachers of the gospel, nor those who are taught can be saved.

Therefore, replied he, it is said, that " Many
" be called, but few chosen." And again, " Enter
" ye in at the strait gate; for wide is the gate and
" broad is the way that leadeth to destruction, and
" many they be which go in thereat : because strait
" is the gate, and narrow is the way which leadeth
" unto life, and few there be that find it." O my
Harry, my Harry, our lives have been employed in seeking and " loving the world and the things of the
" world," therefore " the love of the Father could
" not be in us." O that I had never been born !
O thou God, whose tribunal, at this hour, is set up so tremendously against me ; at length I feel the propriety of thy precepts, in rejecting the world and all that is therein ; for what can they yield, save a little food and raiment to bodily corruption, or incitements to that pride which cast Lucifer into a gulph, that now opens before me without a bottom ?

As I trembled and had nothing to answer, I proposed to bring some of our clergy to him. No, Harry, no, says he, I will have none of their worldly comforts ; I will not cast my soul upon blattered expectations. Can they persuade me that I am one
of

of the few that are chosen ; can they tell me wherein I have striven to enter at the strait gate, wherein many shall seek to enter but shall not be able ?

Here he sunk into a fit of agonizing desperation, so that a cold dew broke forth from all parts of his body, and fell, drop after drop, down his ghastly and fearful countenance. Never, madam, never did I feel such a kind of anguishing horror as I then felt ; I was affrighted and all frozen to my inmost soul. Haste, my dear Sir, exclaimed lady Maitland, make haste through this part of your narration, I beseech you ! I also feel for myself, I am terrified to the last degree.

At length continued Mr. Clinton, I recollected myself a little. My master, I cried, my father, my dearest father, since you will not take comfort in your own righteousness, take comfort in that of him who was made righteousness for you. Do you not now reject the world ? do you not now deny yourself ? I do, I do, he said, I detest the one and the other. And do you not feel that you are wholly a compound of sin and death ? Ay, he cried, there is the weight, there is the mountain under which I sink for ever. Come then to Christ, my father, heavy laden as you are, and he will, questionless, embrace you, and be rest to you, my father ! I would come, Harry, he cried, but I dare not, I am not able. Strive, my father ; do but turn to him, and he will more than meet you. Cry out, with sinking Peter, " Save, Lord, or I perish ! " and he will catch you with the hand of his ever ready salvation.

Here his countenance began to settle into an earnest composure, and his eyes were turned and fixed upward ; while his old and enfeebled body continued to labour under the symptoms of near dissolution. At length he started, and seized my hand with a dying pressure, There is comfort, Harry, there is comfort ! he cried, and expired.

I was

I was now cast, once more, upon a strange and friendless world. All the interests of my heart were buried with this family; and I seemed to myself, as without kindred or connections in the midst of mankind. Your dear mamma, indeed, sometimes called to condole with me, and water my losses with her tears; and in her, and you, my cousin, young as you then were, was locked up and centered the whole stock that I had left of endearing sensations.

As the scenes of my former happiness served daily and nightly, to render me more wretched by a sad recollection, I determined to quit my house and to take private lodgings. For this purpose I summoned Mr. Golding's domestics; and as he had made no will, I first paid them their wages, and then gave them such pretended legacies as brought their tears and their blessings in a shower upon me.

As soon as I had discharged all, except the two favourite servants of my master and my Matty, I desired that John, our little old man, should be sent to me.

John, said I, as he entered, here is a bill for five hundred pounds, which our good old master has left you, in token of his acknowledgment of your true and loving services, and to help, with what you have saved, to soften and make easy the bed of death in your old age. Do you mean to part with me, Sir, said John, seemingly thankless and unconcerned about the gift which I had offered him. Indeed, John, said I, in my present state of dejection, attendance of any kind would but be an incumbrance to me. Then, Sir, you may keep your bounty to yourself, for I shall break my heart before five and twenty hours are over. Nay, John, said I, I am far from turning you from me; stay with me as my friend and welcome, but not as my servant; and I shall see the comfort of old times in always seeing you about me. Thank you, thank you.

you, Sir, he cried, I will not disturb you with my tears; but, I should die unblest, I should die unblest, if I died out of your presence! so saying, he rushed from me in a fit of restrained passion.

I then sent for my wife's maid, whom I formerly mentioned. She had just heard of my discharging the other servants, and entered with a sad and alarmed countenance. Come near, Susan, I am going to part with you, said I; come to me, and give me a farewell kiss. She approached with downcast looks, when, taking her in my arms, I pressed and kissed her repeatedly, and scarce withheld my tears. O, my girl, my Matty's precious girl, I cried, I am not forgetful of your love, your honour, and your disinterestedness toward us. Here, my Susy, your darling mistress presents you with this bill of a thousand pounds, and, if you choose, I will give you cash for it within a quarter of an hour. This, however, does not discharge me from my regard and attention to you. You are of a helpless sex, my Susy, that is subject to many impositions and calamities; wherefore, when this sum shall fail you, come to me again, come to me as to your friend, as to your debtor, Susy, and I will repeat my remembrance, and repeat it again, as you may happen to have occasion; for while I have sixpence left, the favourite friend of my Matty shall not want her proportion.

Here the grateful and amazed creature threw herself on the floor. She cried aloud, while the family heard and echoed to her lamentations. She clasped my knees, she kissed my feet again and again. I could not disengage myself, I could not force her from me. O, my master, she cried, my all that is left to me of my adored, my angel mistress! must I then be torn from you? must you live without the service of the hands and heart of your Susy? But I understand your regard and care for me, my master!

ter ! it is a cruel and naughty world, and must be complied with.

Here I compelled her to rise, and kissing her again, I turned hastily to the chamber where my Matty's corpse had been laid ; and bolting the door, and casting myself on the bed, I broke into tears, and at length wept myself to sleep.

While I was preparing to leave the once-loved mansion, I found, in Mr. Golding's cabinet, a parchment that much surprised me. On my marriage, he had proposed to make a settlement of his fortune upon me, which, however, I obstinately refused to accept ; whereupon, without my privity he got this deed perfected, which contained an absolute conveyance to me of all his worldly effects and possessions ; and this again renewed in me the tender and endearing remembrance of each of those kindnesses and benefits which he had formerly conferred upon me.

I now found myself in possession of near a million of money, which, however, in my disposition of mind at the time, appeared no worthier than so much lumber in a waste room. And I know not how it was that, through the subsequent course of my life, although I was by no means of an economical turn, though I never sued for a debt, nor gave a denial to the wants of those who asked, nor turned away from him that desired to borrow of me, yet uncoveted wealth came pouring in upon me.

It was not without some sighs and a plentiful shower, that I departed from the seat of all my past enjoyments. I took lodgings within a few doors of your father ; and my little household consisted of my favourite Irishman, my little old man, two footmen, and an elderly woman who used daily to dress a plain dish of meat for us.

It was then, my fairest cousin, that your opening graces and early attractions drew me daily to your house ; my heart was soothed and my griefs cheered by

by the sweetness of your prattle ; and I was melted down and minted anew, as it were, by the unaffected warmth and innocence of your caresses.

As I had no faith in dreams, not even in that of my Matty, I thought it impossible that I should ever marry again. I therefore resolved, in my own mind, to make you my heir, and to endow you in marriage, with the best part of my fortune.—But you are a little pale, madam, you look dejected and fatigued. If you please, I will suspend my narration for the present ; and in the morning if you choose it, as early as you will, I shall renew and proceed in my insignificant history.—Here he pressed her hand to his lips. She withdrew with a tearful eye, and a heaving heart ; and the next day, he resumed his narration, as followeth.

C H A P. XV.

THOUGH you, my cousin, at that time, were a great consolation to me, and a sweet lightener of my afflictions ; yet the griefs of heart which I had suffered were not without their effect : at length they fell on my constitution, and affected my nerves or spirits ; I think our doctors pretty much confound the one with the other. Accordingly, I was advised to travel for change of air and exercise ; and I was preparing for my journey, when there happened in my family the most extraordinary instance
of

of an ever-watchful providence that occurs to my memory.

My little old man John began to decline apace, and at length took to his bed ; and having a tender friendship for him, I went to sit beside him, and to comfort him the best I could. John, said I, are you afraid to die ; No, Sir, not at all, not in the least : I long to be dissolved, and to be with our loving Lord. Indeed, John, said I, I am inclined to think you have been a very good liver. A dog, Sir, a mere dog, desperately wicked, the vilest of sinners ! I am a murderer too, my master, there's blood upon my head. Blood ! said I, and started. Yes, Sir, replied John ; but then the blood that was shed for me, is stronger and more precious than the blood that was shed by me. Blood, however, John, is a very terrible thing ; are you not afraid to appear before the judgment-seat of Christ ? By no means, my dear master ; I have long since laid the burden of my sins before him, for I had nothing else to bring to him, nothing else to offer him ; and he has accepted them and me, and my conscience is at rest in him. Then, John, there may yet be room for hope. There is assurance, my master ; for I have laid hold upon the rock, and cannot be shaken.

But how do you intend to dispose of your worldly substance ? All that I have, Sir, I got with you and my old master ; and where I found it, even there I resolve to leave it. Indeed, John, I will not finger a penny of your money. How much may it amount to ? Eight hundred and thirty-seven pounds, Sir, or thereabout. And have you no relations of your own ? Not one living that I know of. Then think of some one else, for no part of it shall lie on my conscience, I assure you.

I have read, somewhere or other, Sir, of a great king who was advised of God, in a dream, to take the very first man whom he should meet the next morning,

morning, to be his partner in the government. Now, if it pleases you, my master, I will follow the like counsel; and whosoever shall be the first found before our door, let that person be the owner and inheritor of my substance. It shall be even as you say; I will go and see whom God shall be pleased to send to us.

Accordingly I went and opened our door, when a woman, who had nearly passed, turned about at the noise, and perceiving me, came up and said, A little charity, Sir, for the sake of him who had not where to lay his head.

I was strongly affected by the manner in which she addressed me, and eyeing her attentively, I observed that she was clean though meanly apparelled; wherefore, to make a further trial whether our adventure was likely to prove prosperous or not, I slipped a guinea into her hand, and desired her to go about her business. Accordingly, she curtsied and went from me a few steps, when, looking into her hand, she turned suddenly back; Sir, Sir, says she, here had like to have been a sad mistake; you meant to give me a shilling, and you have given me a whole guinea. It was, says I, a very great mistake, indeed; but be pleased to come in, and we will try to rectify our errors.

Here, I took her into the chamber where John lay, and having constrained her to sit down, I put my hand in my pocket. Here, good woman, said I, here are ten guineas for you, to make you some amends for the mistake I was guilty of in giving you but one. The poor creature could scarcely credit her senses, but raising her eyes in ecstasy, and dropping from the chair upon her knees, she was proceeding to bless me; but I peremptorily insisted on her retaking her seat. Mistress, said I, be pleased to stay your prayers for the present; what I want from you is the story of your life. tell me who and what you are, without suppressing any circumstance,

circumstance, or concealing the faults of which you have been guilty, and I will make you the mistress of twenty guineas, that shall be added to what you have already received.

Sir, said she, you frighten me; my story is a very unhappy and a very foolish story, and cannot be of the smallest consequence to you. Sure, you are too much of the gentleman to desire to ensnare me; and indeed, I know not of any thing whereby I may be ensnared. Wherefore, bountiful Sir, unto you, as unto heaven, I will open my whole soul, without seeking to know why you look into the concerns of such a worm as I am.

I am the daughter of a farmer in Essex, my maiden name was Eleanor Damer. I was married, early in life, to a man who kept a chandler's shop in a little lane that led to Tower Hill, his name was Barnaby Tirrel. Barnaby Tirrel! exclaimed John, are you very sure that his name was Barnaby Tirrel? Peace, John, I cried; whatever you may know of this man, or of any other matter, I command you not to interrupt the woman, till she has finished her story.—She then continued.

I had neither brother nor sister, Sir, but one brother, a twin-brother; and we loved one another, as though there was nobody else in the world to be loved.

About three years before my marriage, my brother Tommy, then a sweet pretty lad, took to a sea-faring life, and went from me, I know not where, upon a voyage that I was told was a very great way off; and so I cried, day and night, as many tears after him as would have served me to swim in.

My husband was very fond of me, and when he used to see me cry, while he spoke of my Tommy, he would kiss me and try to comfort me, and say, that he wished for nothing more than his return to
old

old England, that he might welcome him and love him as much as I did.

One night, on the ninth month of my marriage, as I sat moping and alone, my husband being abroad upon some business, I heard a knocking at the door, which was opened by our little servant girl. And then, before you could say this, in leaped my brother, and caught me fast in his dear arms.

I gave a great shout for joy, you may be sure; and pushing my Tommy from me, and pulling him to me again and again, we embraced, and cried, and kissed, and embraced and kissed again, as though we never could be tired.

In the mean while, the door being open, my cruel Barnaby entered, unperceived by either of us; and seeing a strange man so fond and familiar with me, he opened a long clasped knife which he had in his pocket, and rushing up, he gave my darling brother three stabs in the body, before he could speak a word or turn about to defend himself. Then, casting down the knife, in a minute he was out of the house, and I never saw him more.

For a time, I stood like a stone, and then giving a great shriek, I fainted and fell on my brother as he lay weltering in his blood.

Our little Mary, in the while, being frightened almost to death, ran about like a wild thing, and alarmed the street. Our neighbours crowded in, and sent for the next surgeon. My brother's wounds were probed and dressed, and he was laid in our spare bed.

Mean time, being forward with child, I fell into strong and untimely labour, and after very grievous travail, was delivered of a boy, who was christened and called James, after my dear and lately deceased father.

No pains of my own, however, kept me from enquiring after that dear and lamented brother who had been killed, as I supposed for his love to me.

But

But his youth and natural strength carried him through all dangers. In three months he was up and about, as well as ever; and in less than three more, he set out on another voyage, from whence he never, never, O never returned!

Before he went abroad, my dear and sweet fellow had left me a note of hand for the receipt of his wages. But in five years after, I heard that he was cast away, or killed by the Barbary people: and though I went and went again, in the middle of my wants, and in the middle of my sorrows, to ask and to petition for his pay from the admiralty; I never could get an answer of any profit or any comfort.

My little Jemmy, however, grew and throve and pratted apace, and was my only prop under all my afflictions. My husband, indeed, had left me in pretty circumstances; and had he but stayed with me, we should have prospered above our fellows. But what can a woman do single, weak, and unprotected; I was imposed upon by some; by others I was refused payment for the goods that I had given; and at length I was reduced to poverty, and obliged to shut up shop.

Mean time I had spared no cost on the bringing up of my Jemmy. I had given him school learning, and he now was grown a very towardly and clever boy: and having taken to messages, my sweet fellow, every night, used to bring to me whatever he had earned in the day-time.

In the loss of my husband and brother; in the loss of my Barnaby, and in the loss of my Tommy, to be sure I had grief upon grief; so that my health went from me, and next my strength went from me, and I was not able to work at the washing-business as before. But this didn't signify much, while my child had his health; for he had now got a porter's place in the custom-house, and, young as he was, he willingly carried heavy burdens to have

have the pleasure of bringing home his hard earnings to his mammy. But about six weeks ago, may it please your honour, my dear boy fell ill of a quartian ague, as they call it, under which he, and his mother's heart, still continue to labour.

As soon as she had ended her short narrative, Well, John, said I, methinks this business will do; in my opinion you have got a very worthy inheritor of your fortune; what say you to it, John? First, Sir, let me ask her a question or two, if you please. Honest woman, draw your chair a little nearer to me, I pray you. And now, tell me the truth; Did you ever love your husband? Yes, dearly, indeed, very dearly did I love him; for he had loved me very dearly, till that miserable night. But when, as I thought, he had killed my brother, I hated him as much as I had ever loved him before. But then again, when my Tommy had recovered of his wounds, I sent far and near to enquire after him and find him out; and when I could learn no tidings of him, I put it into all the printed papers, that Thomas Damer was well recovered, and that Barnabas Tirrel, who had wounded him, might return, without danger, to his wife and infant.

And he is returned, shouted John, he is returned, my Nelly!—your barbarous and bloody husband, who stabbed your brother, and left you and your infant to famish, he is returned to you, my Nelly! and, in his death, he shall make you amends for all the sufferings which he brought upon you during his life-time! But, my master, my dearest master, send immediately for my child, my Jemmy, I beseech you, that, bad as I am myself, I may give him a father's blessings before I die.

I was surprised and affected, madam, beyond expression, by incidents that were at once so wonderful and so tender: and I directly sent servants and a sedan chair for James, with orders to have him

him carefully and warmly wrapt up; for what his mother told me of him, had already given me a very strong prejudice in his favour.

Mean while, Mrs. Tirrel had sunk on her knees by her husband's bed-side, and was plentifully pouring forth her tears upon him; partly for joy of having found him, and partly for grief of having found him in that condition.

O, my Nelly, my Nelly, cried Barnabas, had I known who the person was whose blood I drew that terrible night, I would sooner have thrust my knife into any own heart, than into any part of the body of that dear brother of yours. But I was old and ugly, you know: and you were young and handsome; and jealousy is a mad devil that rages in the breast like hell-fire; it never knew how to spare, but tears and consumes every thing that comes within its reach.

At length James was brought to us; and as we were in his father's apartments, a chamber no way adorned, James entered without any respect to persons. He was a tall and comely youth, but very pale and lean; and as it was one of his well days, he walked in without help. He had barely been told that his mother sent for him in a hurry; so that he entered with a visible alarm in his countenance.

What is the matter, my dear mother? says he; alas, I am little able to help you at present. I hope nothing has happened that is suddenly distressful. Nothing amiss, my child, more than that your dear father, for whom I have sought and been sighing this many a year, your father lies dangerously ill in this very bed, my Jemmy. Am I then so blessed, cried the boy, as to see and embrace a father? O my child, exclaimed the old man, and eagerly stretched his arms toward him, come to my bosom, thou only offspring of my bowels! I may now say, with blessed Jacob, let me die, let me
me

me die, since I have seen thy face, and thou art alive, my son!

I would at any time give a thousand pounds, my cousin, for a tenth of the enjoyment that I then had, in the feelings which God poured into the hearts of this little family, on their so very unexpected and marvellous a meeting. It appeared to me, however, that young James even exceeded his parents in love; and this gave me such a cordial attachment to him, that from that hour to this we have never been sundered. He never failed nor forsook me; and at this very day, he is my respected friend, and the superintendant of my family.

John, otherwise Barnabas, continued to linger for about a fortnight longer, and then departed quite happy, and without a groan. During the same space also, James was daily attended by my own physician, and was nearly re-established in his health.

Being then intent on my departure, I sent for Mrs. Tirrel. Mrs. Tirrel, says I, I should be much inclined to take your James along with me, if I did not think you would grieve overmuch in his absence. No, no, Sir, said she, I would to heaven I were, myself, a young man for your sake. I desire no better either of him or for him, than that he should live and die faithfully and lovingly in your service.

When Mr. Clinton came to this part of his story, a messenger entered in fearful haste, and delivered a letter to lady Maitland. As soon as she had run it over. My dearest Sir, she cried, I must leave you this instant. I lately made you an offer of a hundred thousand pounds; and now I know not that I have so many shillings upon earth. I am here informed, that the trustee of all my affairs has absconded and made his escape to France; but I must hurry to town, and enquire after this business.

ness. So saying, she curtsied, and suddenly withdrew, without giving her cousin time to make a tender of his services.

The next morning, Mr. Clinton ordered his chariot to the door, and hastened to attend her ladyship at her house in London, but there he was told, that she had set out for Dover about an hour before; and he returned, much dejected and grieved on her account.

In about three weeks after, Mr. Clement, with his young pupil, came home, quite lightened of the money they had taken abroad. Mr. Fenton, for so we shall call him again, gave Clement a friendly embrace, and took Harry to his careffes, as though he had returned from a long and dangerous voyage.

Well Clement, said Mr. Fenton, what account have you to give us of your expedition? An account, Sir, that would be extremely displeasing to any man living except yourself: in short, our young gentleman, here, has plunged you above a thousand pounds in debt, over the large sums that we carried with us. I hope the objects were worthy, said Mr. Fenton. Wonderfully worthy, indeed, Sir; I never saw such tender and affecting scenes. Then I shall be overpaid and enriched by the narration.

Here, Harry enquired impatiently for Mrs. Clement and his friend Ned; and being told that they were on a visit to the widow Neighbourly, he took a hasty leave for the present, and away he flew to embrace them.

As soon as he was gone, Sir, said Mr. Clement, I cannot think that there is, in the world, such another boy as yours. I will leave to himself the detail of our adventures in the several prisons; they had such an effect on his heart, that they cannot but have made a deep impression on his memory;

ry ; so I shall only tell you of what happened in our way to London.

As we were chatting and walking leisurely along the road, a poor man before us happened to drop in a fit of the falling-sickness. When Harry saw the writhings and convulsions in which he lay, he turned pale, and looked vastly frightened ; and seizing me under the arm, he cried, come, come away ! and hurried me off as fast as he could. But we had not gone far, till his pace began to abate, and stopping, and hesitating, let us turn, let us turn, Mr. Clement, he cried, let us go back again and help the poor man ! We then returned hastily, and, raising his head, we kept him from bruising it against the ground. I then forced open his clenched hands, and having chafed the palms a while, he began to recover, and soon came to himself. Meanwhile Harry's fright was not yet quite over. He seemed willing to get away from the object of his terror, and putting his hand in his pocket, and giving him all the silver he had, he wished him better health, and away he went.

We had not gone above half a mile further, when I saw a little girl, in a field on the right hand, endeavouring to drive a cow through a small gate into the road, in order to be milked, as I suppose, by her mother ; but the cow kicked up her heels and proved wanton and refractory, and ran hither and thither, and would not be guided. The poor child then set up a cry of as bitter distress, as if all that was valuable in the world was going to ruin. Harry gave a ready ear to the sound of lamentation, and seeing the plight that the poor thing was in, he suddenly crossed the road, above ankle deep in dirt, and leaping the ditch, he proved nimbler than the cow, and driving her through the pass, he turned her into the way that the child would have her go.

That morning, indeed, was to Harry a morning of petty adventures. By the time that we approach-

ed the suburbs, we had nearly overtaken a grown girl who carried a basket of eggs on her head. A great lubberly boy, just then passed us by at a smart pace, and tripping up to the girl, gave the basket a tip with his hand, and dashed all the eggs into mash against a stony part of the road, and again taking to his heels, run on as before. Immediately Harry's indignation was kindled, and setting out at top speed, he soon overtook him, and gave him several smart strokes with his little cane, across the shoulders. The fellow then turned upon Harry, and gave him a furious blow with his fist over the head, while I hastened to his relief, as I perceived that the other was quite an overmatch for him. But before I arrived, our hero had put a quick end to the combat; for springing from the ground, he darted his head full into the nose and mouth of his adversary, who instantly roared out, and seeing his own blood come pouring down, he once more took to flight, while Harry continued to press upon him, and belaboured him at pleasure, till he judged that he had beaten him to the full value of the eggs.

Meanwhile the poor girl, wholly unmindful of what passed, remained wailing and wringing her hands over the wreck of her merchandise. The voice of a Syren could not so powerfully have attracted and recalled Harry from the length he had gone; he returned with speed to her, and I followed. My poor girl, says he, where were you going with those eggs? To market, master, says she. And what did you expect to get for them? About five shillings, Sir; and I had promised my daddy and mammy to lay it out in shoes and stockings for my little brothers and sisters; and so I must now bear all the blame of the poor things going barefoot. Here she again set up her wailings, and her tears poured down afresh.

Harry then desired me to lend him ten shillings, and turning to the mourner, hold out your two hands,

hands, my poor girl, he cried: then putting five shillings into each hand, here is the payment for your eggs, said he; and here are five shillings more, though I fear it is too little, to pay you for all the tears they cost you.

Never did I see so sudden, so great a change in any countenance. Surprise, gratitude, ecstasy flashed from her eyes, and gave a joyous flush to the muscling of her aspect. She hurried her money into her bosom, and dropping on her knees in the dirt, and seizing hold of Harry's hand, she squeezed and kissed it repeatedly, without being able to utter a word; while Harry's eyes began to fill, and endeavouring to disengage himself, he made off as fast as he could, from such thanks as he thought he had no way deserved.

This, Sir, was the last of our adventures going to London. But had you seen us, on our return, about two hours ago, you would have wondered at the mirey plight into which we were put, by helping passengers up with their bundles, that had tumbled into the dirt; or by assisting to raise cattle that had fallen under their carriages; for master Harry would compel me to be as busy and active in matters of charity as himself.

However, Sir, I am to tell you, that Harry, with all his excellencies of person, heart, and understanding, will be accounted a mere idiot among people of distinction, if he is not permitted to enter into some of the fashionable foibles and fashionable vices of the age.

We were taking a walk in the Mall, when we were met by the Earl of Mansfield, who expressed great joy at seeing his old acquaintance, as he called him; and he pressed us so earnestly to dinner, that we could not, in manners, refuse him.

There was a vast concourse of company, especially of the little quality of both sexes, who came to pay

pay their respects to young lord Bottom and his sister the lady Louisa.

Harry was received and saluted by lady Mansfield and the young lord, without any appearance of the old animosity. Some time after dinner, a large packet of letters was brought in to the earl, and making his excuse to Harry alone, he rose from the table and retired to his closet.

Lord Bottom and his sister then led the young males and females to an adjoining apartment, where several card-tables were laid; and I began to tremble for the credit of my pupil on the occasion, as I knew him to be a novice in such matters.

In the mean time, the remaining ladies and gentlemen divided into two or three parties at Ombre; and I sauntered about the room, admiring the prints of the Ariadne and the Aurora, that were taken from Guido, as also some capital paintings that the earl had brought from Italy.

I had spent above an hour in this pleasing amusement, and had nearly made the tour of the whole dining-room; when, as I stood at a little distance behind my lady's chair, seeming inattentive to any thing that passed, lord Bottom entered on tiptoe, and tripping up to his mother, and tittering and whispering in her ear, what do you think, mamma, said he? sure, master Fenton is a fool, a downright fool, upon my honour! He does not know a single card in the whole pack; he does not know the difference between the ace of hearts and the nine of clubs. I do not think either that he knows any thing of the difference or value of coin; for, as we passed through the hall to-day, a beggar asked for a halfpenny, and I saw him slip a shilling into his hand. Indeed, mamma, he is the greatest fool that ever I knew; and yet, poor fellow, he does not seem to know any thing of the matter himself.

During this oration of lord Bottom on the virtues of his new friend, I felt my whole body glow and
tingle

tingle with concern; and soon after, Harry entered with the rest of the small quality. Master Fenton, cries my lady, I beg to speak with you. Don't you know the cards, my dear? No, indeed, madam. Can't you play at dice? No, madam. Can you play at draughts, polish, or chess? Not at all, madam. Why then, my dear, I must tell you, that all your father's fortune will never introduce you among people of any breeding or of any fashion. Can you play at no kind of game, Master Harry? A little at fox and geese, madam. And pray, my dear, said my lady smiling, which of the parties do you espouse? The part of the geese, madam. I thought as much, pertly, cried out my lord Bottom; whereupon a loud laugh was echoed through the room.

Here my lady chid the company, and calling Harry to her again, for he had gone something aloof, tell me, I pray you, said she, why you espouse the part of the geese? Because, madam, I always wish that simplicity should get the better of fraud and cunning.

The countess here looked astonished; and having gazed a while at him, and caught and kissed him eagerly, you are a noble fellow, she cried, and all must be fools or mad that ever shall take you for the one or the other.

The elder gentry, here, laid their cards aside, and desired the young ones to set about some play. Lady Louisa proposed draw-gloves, or questions and commands, and to it they went.

Among the females was one Miss Uppish, heiress to a vast fortune. Though her person was deformed, her face was the picture of confident disdain; and scarce any one could speak to her, or look at her, without being told of the contempt she had for them, by the side glance of her eye, the writhing of her neck, and tossing up of her head.

In

In the course of the play our Harry was commanded to put the candle into the hand of Miss Uppish, and then to kiss the candlestick; which command he obeyed literally, by giving her the candle, and kissing the candlestick which he held in his own hand.

Hereupon, a great shout was set up in the young assembly, and, O the fool, the senseless creature, the fool, the fool, the fool! was repeated throughout; while lord Bottom laughed, and danced about in the impatience of his joy.

I was amazed that Harry's countenance seemed no way disconcerted by all this ridicule. At length lady Mansfield called him to her. How, my dear, could you be guilty of such an error, she said; did not you know that, when you gave the candle into the hand of the young lady, she became the candlestick, and it was her you should have kissed? Harry then approached to her ladyship's ear, and in a pretty loud whisper, said, I did not like the metal, madam, that the candlestick was made of. Again lady Mansfield looked surprised, and said, you are a sly rogue, a very sly rogue, upon my honour; and have sense enough to dupe the wisest of us all.

Jemmy Bottom, cried my lady aloud, come here! I can't but tell you, Jemmy, that you have behaved yourself extremely ill to your young friend here, who might have improved you by his example, as much as he has honoured you by his visit. I must further tell you, Jemmy Bottom, that, whenever you pique yourself on degrading Mr. Fenton, you only pride in your own abasement, and glory in your shame. Hereupon I got up, and leaving our compliments for the earl, I carried off my young charge, for fear of our falling into any further disgrace.

While Harry is abroad, said Mr. Fenton, be pleased to give me a general sketch of the manner in which you disposed of your money. In the first place, Sir, answered Clement, you will find, by
this

this list, that, for little more than the five hundred pounds allotted, we released ninety-five prisoners, whose debts amounted from forty shillings to about twelve pounds per man. These, in the general, had been journeymen taylorers or weavers, or professors of other inferior crafts; and as they wanted means or encouragement for exercising their respective occupations in gaol, they subsisted on the pence which they got by begging at the grates, or on their dividends of occasional sums, which were sent for their relief by charitable individuals. Nearly all of them were thin in flesh, and extremely shabby in clothing; and yet they could hardly be said to excite compassion, as they appeared so chearful and unfeeling of their own wretchedness. Neither was there one of them, that I could learn a single circumstance of, whose story was worth reciting.

Some, however, were of a quality much superior to this class. Among others, there was a French marquis and a German prince; the prince had been put under arrest by his caterer, and the marquis by his taylor; so that something less than fifty pounds set them both at liberty.

While the keeper of the Fleet Prison, was making out a list for us, of the principal debtors, Harry and I took a turn about the court, and observed two fellows in liveries, bearing several smoking covers, up the stone stairs, to a front dining-room. This surprised me, and gave me the curiosity to enquire what prisoners it could be who lived in so expensive and superb a manner. Sir, said the under-keeper, there are few men now at liberty, near so wealthy as this gentleman, who has done us the honour to set up his staff of rest in our house. His name is Sink. He is an attorney and an old bachelor, turned of sixty years of age. He is in for several sums, amounting to upward of nine thousand pounds, and he is reputed to be worth above double that money.

During the last twenty years, he behaved himself with the strictest probity toward all men, and with the strictest appearance of piety toward God. In the dark, in frost and snow, and all inclemencies of weather, he never missed attending morning-service at church. He was equally solicitous to be at evening prayer; and, whatever company he chanced to have with him, or, how important soever the business in which he was engaged, the moment he heard the bell ring, he would huddle up his papers and break away without ceremony. He was eager in his enquiries to know where the sacrament was soonest to be administered, and he never missed receiving it at least once in the week. Whenever he heard any profaneness or obscenity in the streets, he would stop to reprove and expostulate with the offender. In short, he so perfectly counterfeited or took off, as they call it, the real Christian, that many looked to see him, like Enoch or Elijah, taken alive into heaven.

This perpetual parade of sanctity gave him such an eclat and unmeasurable credit, that he was left trustee and executor in a multitude of wills; and numbers also deposited their substance in his hands, in order to be laid out at interest on securities, and so forth.

Three months since, about the dawning, as his butcher happened to pass by his door, he heard it open, and turning, saw a number of porters come out heavy laden. This gave him a kind of suspicion. He let them all pass, and walking softly after, he stepped up to the hindmost and offered him half a crown, on condition of his telling him where they were carrying those parcels. That I will, said the porter; for the secret, if such it is, is nothing to me you know. In short, we are carrying them to the wharf to be put on board a boat that waits to take them in.

The

The butcher said no more, but hurried away to the baker, and as they both run to the office, they met the brewer by the way. They took out their respective actions, and taking a constable with them, they seized on good Mr. Sink, as he was stepping into a coach and fix to make the best of his way to Dover. He would have paid them their money and discharged their actions on the spot; but here the master, in whom he trusted, happened to leave him in the lurch. As he had turned all his effects into money, and his money into paper, he had not at hand wherewith to pay his instant creditors. So they hurried him to gaol, and before the banks were open, the matter was blown, and action after action came pouring fast upon him.

When he found himself thus at bay, he cast aside his disguise, and set them all at defiance. His creditors have since offered to accept ten shillings, and some of them to accept five shilling in the pound; but he swears that he will never pay them a groat; for he is now as liberal of his oaths and impious execrations, as he was lately of his more impious profanation of Gospel phrases. And thus he daily revels in the sensual consumption of those wretches whom he hath so inhumanely defrauded; while hundreds of orphans and widows, and other misera- bles, perish for want of the sustenance, which one infernal appetite devours without remorse. Nay, several of his creditors are, at this very time, famishing in this prison, while they see him feasting so lavishly upon their spoils.

The gorge of my soul, cried Mr. Fenton, the very gorge of my soul rises against this dæmon. Can nothing be done to bring him to punishment? Our parliament will surely interfere in such a calling exigence; they will send to the several banks, and take up all the deposits that have been made in his name. Alas, Sir, said Clement, he was already aware of such possibilities, and has entered all
his

his lodgments in feigned names, and to bearer upon demand.

Indeed, continued Clement, I heartily wished, at the time, that the laws of the Grecians and Romans had been in force among us, by which the debtor was given up to be set to labour, whipped, or tortured at the pleasure of the creditor.

God forbid, God forbid! exclaimed Mr. Fenton.

When we see mankind divided into the rich and the poor, the strong and the weak, the sound and the sickly, we are apt to imagine, that health, strength, or opulence, was given to those, and infirmity, want, or weakness appointed to these, as marks of the peculiar favour or disfavour of Providence.

God, however, knows that there is nothing permanently good, or evil, in any of these things. He sees that nothing is a good but virtue, and that nothing is a virtue, save some quality of benevolence. On benevolence, therefore, he builds the happiness of all his intelligent creatures; and in this our mortal state, (our short apparatus for a long futurity) he has ordained the relative differences of rich and poor, strong and weak, sound and sickly, &c. to exercise us in the offices of that charity, and those affections, which, reflecting and reflected, like mutual light and warmth, can alone make our good to all eternity.

Benevolence produces and constitutes the heaven or beatitude of God himself: He is no other than an infinite and eternal Good Will: Benevolence must, therefore, constitute the beatitude or heaven of all dependent beings, however infinitely diversified through several departments and subordinations, agreeable to the several natures and capacities of creatures.

God has appointed human power and human wealth, as a ready and sufficient fund for human want and weakness; to which fund, therefore, they

they have as good a right to resort, as any other creditors have to respective trusts or deposits: for, though poverty and weakness are not creditors by the laws of man, they are creditors by the eternal laws of nature and equity; and must here, or hereafter, bring their debtors to account.

Every man, when he becomes a member of this or that society, makes a deposit of three several sorts of trusts, That of his **LIFE**, that of his **LIBERTY**, and that of his **PROPERTY**.

Now as every man, in his separate or independent state, has by nature the absolute disposal of his property, he can convey the disposal thereof to society, as amply and absolutely as he was, in his separate right, entitled thereto.

This, however, cannot be said of his life, or of his liberty. He has no manner of right to take away his own life; neither to depart from his own liberty: he cannot therefore convey to others a right and authority which he hath not in himself.

The question then occurs, by what right it is that the legislative and executive powers of community appoint some persons to death, and others to imprisonment? My answer is short, and follows:

It is the right, perhaps the duty, of every man, to defend his life, liberty and property, and to kill or bind the attempters. This right he can, therefore, convey; and on such conveyance, it becomes the right and duty of the trustees of society to put to death, or imprison all who take away, or attempt the life, liberty, or property of any of its members.

This right, however, extends to criminal matters only; and it does not yet appear to me, upon what reason, or right rule, founded in nature or policy, the several societies of mankind have agreed to deliver up their members to slavery, to stripes, tortures,

tortures, or imprisonment, for matters merely civil, such as debts.

Several of the states of Greece, though accounting the rest of the world as Barbarians, and even the Roman Republic, during the times of its most boasted policy and freedom, gave up insolvent debtors (without enquiring into the causes or occasions of such insolvency) as slaves or absolute property, into the hands of their creditors, to be sold at will, or put to labour, or starved, macerated or tortured, in order to give value in vengeance, which they could not give in coin, or other equivalent commodities.

The Jewish or Mosaic law, though allowing sufficiently, as Christ says, for "the hardness of that peoples hearts," yet gave perfect enlargement to all Jews who were bondmen, and perfect remission to all Jews who were personal debtors, on every seventh or sabbatical year, and on every seventh or sabbatical year, or jubilee, all prisons were thrown open; all slaves, though foreigners or aliens, set at liberty, and even the lands were enfranchised, however mortgaged, or labouring under debt and execution: that all things, animate or inanimate, might have an earnest of that immunity, and perfect freedom, which God originally intended, and keeps in store for all his creatures.

The laws of Egypt permitted no member to deprive the public of the life, liberty, or labour of any other member, except he were a criminal, not fitting to live, or to be suffered to walk at large. In all cases of debtor and creditor, they equitably appointed value for value, as far as the substance of the debtor could reach; and in case of insufficiency, the insolvent party was obliged to leave, in pledge, the Mummies, or preserved bodies of his deceased ancestors, till, by industry or good fortune, either he, or his posterity, should be enabled to redeem them. A matter of refined, as
well

well as charitable policy; as nothing was held more infamous, among the Egyptians, than their inability to produce the Mummies of their forefathers.

The laws of Holland, by their late qualifications, seem to acknowledge the iniquity, or inadequateness, of depriving a man of the possibility of earning, merely because he has not an immediate ability to pay. Sensible, therefore, that all men are debtors to God, and reciprocally debtors and creditors to each other, they have ordained, that he who imprisons an insolvent debtor, shall pay the proper penalty of his malevolence or indiscretion, by maintaining the party, from whom he takes the ability of maintaining himself.

It must be admitted, that, were our laws less severe with respect to debtors, were people less afraid of a jail on failure of payment, there would be less credit, and consequently less dealing in this so wonderfully wealthy and trading a nation. But if our credit were less, would not our extravagance lessen also? Should we see such princely tables among people of the lower class? would so much claret, spirits, and ale, intoxicate a kingdom? should we see the value of a German prince's ransom gorgeously attiring each of our belle-dames, if neither merchant, butcher, brewer, laceman, mercer, milliner, nor taylor, would trust?

Many of our poor city-dealers are yearly undone, with their families, by crediting persons who are privileged not to pay, or whose remoteness, or power, places them beyond the reach of the law. For by the return of *non-invent*, generally made upon writs, one would be apt to imagine, that no single sub-sheriff knew of any such thing as a man of fortune, within his respective county, throughout the kingdom of Great Britain.

Before money became the medium of commerce, the simple business of the world was carried on by truck, or the commutation of one commodity for another.

another. But when men consented to fix certain rateable values upon money, as a ready and portable equivalent for all sorts of effects, credit was consequently introduced, by the engagements of some, to pay so much money in lieu of such commodities, or to deliver such or such commodities on the advance of so much money; and states found it their interest to support such public credit, by enforcing the performance of such engagements.

By the common law of England, no person, except the king, could take the body of another in execution for debt; neither was this prerogative of the crown extended to the subject till the statute of Marlbridge, ch. 23. in the reign of Henry III.

Many contract debts, through vanity or intemperance; or borrow money, or take up goods, with the intention of thieves and robbers, never to make return. When such suffer, they suffer deservedly, in expiation of their guilt. But there are unavoidable damages by water, by fire, the crush of power, oppressive landlords, and more oppressive law-suits, death of cattle, failure of crop, failure of payment in others; with thousands of such like casualties, whereby men may become bankrupt, and yet continue blameless. And in all such cases, one would think that the present ruin was sufficient calamity, without the exertion of law to make that ruin irreparable.

As all the members of a community are interested in the life, liberty, and labours of each other; he who puts the rigour of our laws in execution, by detaining an insolvent brother in gaol, is guilty of a four-fold injury: first, he robs the community of the labours of their brother; secondly, he robs his brother of all means of retrieving his shattered fortune; thirdly, he deprives himself of the possibility of payment; and lastly, he lays an unnecessary burden on the public, who, in charity, must,

must, maintain the member whom he, in his cruelty, confines.

However, since the severity of law is such, that he whose misfortunes have rendered him insolvent, must "make satisfaction," (for so the savages esteem it) by surrendering his body to durance for life; it is surely incumbent on our legislators and governors, to make the condition of the unhappy sufferers as little grievous as may be.

But this most Christian duty, this most humane of all cares, is yet to come. When a debtor is delivered up into the fangs of his gaoler, he is consigned to absolute and arbitrary slavery; and wo be to the wretch whose poverty may not have left him a sop for Cerberus. How more than miserable must be the state of those unhappy men who are shut in from all possible redress, or appeal against the despotic treatment of their savage keepers, whose hearts are habitually hardened to all sense of remorse, and whose ears are rendered callous by incessant groans.

We are credibly informed, that it is usual, with such keepers, to amass considerable fortunes from the wrecks of the wretched; to squeeze them by exorbitant charges and illicit demands, as grapes are squeezed in a vinepress, while one drop remains; and then to huddle them together, into naked walls and windowless rooms; having got all they can, and nothing further to regard, save the return of their lifeless bodies to their creditors.

How many of these keepers exact, from their distressed prisoners, seven and eight shillings per week, for rooms that would not rent at a third of that sum, in any other part of this city. At times, nine of those wretched prisoners are driven to kennel together in a hovel, fit only to stable a pair of horses, while many unoccupied apartments are locked up from use. Even a sufficiency of the common element of water is refused to their necessities,

cessities, an advantage which the felons in Newgate enjoy. Public or private benefactions are dissipated or disposed of, at the pleasure of the keepers, regardless of the intention or order of the donors. And the apartments, appointed to these miserable men, are generally damp or shattered in the flooring, and exposed, by breach or want of windows to the inclemency of night-air, and all the rigour of the seasons.

But what avail their complaints, if the legislature have not authorised, or made it the duty of some especial magistrates to examine into and redress these crying abuses?

But, tell me, continued Mr. Fenton, were there any prisoners of consideration among the confined debtors? A few, Sir, of note, and many who had been well to pass in the world. Among these indeed, it was, that every scene and species of misery was displayed. There you might see, as you have said, numerous families of wretches, whose thin and tattered garments but ill defended their shivering bodies from the inclemency of the elements, that blew through shattered windows, or came pouring from unstaunched roofs.

These people fared incomparably worse than those of the vulgar herd; for being ashamed to beg at the grates, they had nothing to subsist on, save their scanty portions of such charities as happened to be sent in from time to time, and this scarcely supplied them with a sufficiency of water, black bread, and offal; while the recollection of their former affluence added sharp and bitter poignancy to the sense of their present wants.——But here comes my pupil; he will be more particular, on scenes with which his heart was so meltingly affected.

Harry then entered, with Mrs. Clement caressing him on the one side, and his old dependent Ned hanging about him on the other.

As

As soon as Clement and his Arabella had embraced, and all were settled and seated, Well, Harry, said Mr. Fenton, will you favour us with some account of your expedition? Have you ever a pretty story for me, my Harry? Several stories, Sir, said Harry, that were sweet pretty stories when I heard them; but Mr. Clement had better tell them; they would be sadly bungled if they came through my hands, dada. The company will make allowances, replied Mr. Fenton; let us have these stories in your own way, Harry, just as your memory may happen to serve you.

On the second day, dada, as my tutor and I were walking in the court-yard of the Fleet-prison, whom should I spy but my old master, Mr. Vindex, walking, very sad, to and again by the wall. He was so pale and shabby, and so fallen away, that I did not rightly know him, till I looked at him very earnestly. My heart then began to soften and warm toward the poor man; for it told me, that something very sorrowful must have happened, before he could have been brought to that condition. So I went up to him, with a face, I believe, as melancholy as his own.

How do you do, good Mr. Vindex? said I. I should be glad to see you, if I did not see you look so sad. He then stared at me for some time, and at length remembering me, he looked concerned, and turned away to shun me; but I took him lovingly by the hand, and said, you must not leave me, Mr. Vindex; won't you know your old scholar, Harry Fenton? Yes, says he, casting down his mournful eyes, I know you now, master; I know I used you basely, and I know why you are come; but reproach me, and insult me, as much as you please, all is welcome now, since I cannot lie lower, till I am laid in the earth.

I do not mean to insult you; this tear will witness for me, that I do not mean to insult you, my dear

dear Mr. Vindex; and so I wiped my eye. Here are twenty guineas, to put warm clothes upon you in this cold weather. Little and low as I am myself, I will try to do something better for you; and so give me one kiss in token that we are friends.

The poor dear man then opened his broad eyes, in a wild stare upon me, with a look that was made up, half of joy, and half of shame. He then kneeled down, as I supposed, that I might reach to kiss him, and taking me into his arms, You are not born of woman, you are an angel, an angel! he cried; and so he fell a crying, and cried so sadly, that I could not for my heart but keep him company.

I did all I could to pacify and make him cheerful, and getting him up at last, You must not part with me Mr. Vindex, said I, we must dine and spend the day together. Here is Mr. Clement, my tutor, you and he too must be friends.

I then led him, by the hand, into a large ground room, that Mr. Close, the chief keeper had appointed for us; and I ordered dinner to be hastened and brought up. As soon as we were all seated, I began to laugh and joke, after my foolish way, in order to make poor Mr. Vindex merry. When I found that it would not do, Mr. Vindex, said I, be so kind to let me know what the money may come to for which you are confined? A terrible sum, indeed, my darling, said he, no less than a hundred and fifty-two pounds. I then put my hand in my pocket, and taking out two bills and a little matter of money that made up the sum, I put it into his hand, saying, My friend shall never lie in gaol for such a trifle as this.

Having looked for some time at the bills with amazement, he turned to my tutor with a doubtful and shamed face: Is this young gentleman, Sir, said he, duly authorized to disposed of such vast matters

matters as these? He is, says Mr. Clement, he is the carver and disposer of his father's fortune at pleasure; and I am confident that his father will think himself doubly paid, in the use that his noble son has made of his privilege this day.

A gleam then, like that of sunshine, broke through his sad countenance, as through the clouds of a dark day: And are you the one, he cried, are you the one, master Harry, whom I treated so barbarously? You may forgive me, my little cherubim; you indeed, may forgive me; but I never, I never shall forgive myself. O, Mr. Vindex, said I, I would very nearly undergo the same whipping again, to do you twice the kindness, and make you love me twice as much as you now love me.

Dinner was now served, and calling for wine, I filled him a bumper, in a large glass, which he drank to the health of my glorious dada, as he called you, Sir. Upon this, we grew very merry and friendly among one another; and when dinner was over, I begged him to tell me how he came to be put into confinement.

O, master Harry, he cried, I have suffered all that I have suffered, very justly, very justly, for my harsh and cruel usage of you, master Harry.

After the affair of the hobgoblins, as you know the shame to which I was put by my fright and by my scourging, began to be whispered, and then to be noised about the town. The boys, at length, caught the rumour, and began to hoot at me; and the more I chastised them, the more they gathered about me, and shouted after me, A rod for the flogger, a rod for the flogger.

No disease is so deadly, no blasting so baneful as contempt to a man, in the way of his profession. My boys grew disorderly, and behaved themselves in school, without respect to my person, or regard to my government. Even my intimates shunned me, and would cast at me a side-glance of smiling scorn

scorn as they passed. My school then melted from me like snow in a fog. Even my boarders forsook me. I stood at a high rent; my effects were seized by the landlord. It was in vain that I solicited payment from the parents of my scholars. No one who was indebted to me would give me a penny; while all that I owed came like a tumbling house upon me; and so I was cast into this prison, from whence your bounty has set me free.

My poor broken-hearted wife would have accompanied me to gaol; but as I had not wherewithal to give her a morsel of bread, I sent her to an old aunt, who had the humanity to take her in.

Alas, alas, poor Mr. Vindex, said I, had I guessed any part of the mischiefs that our unlucky pranks have brought upon you, I would have put both my hands into the furnace of Nebuchadnezzar, rather than have had art or part in such a wickedness. For herein we acted the fable of the frogs and the boys; that which was play to us, was death to you, Mr. Vindex.

In conscience, now, we are indebted to you for every misfortune we caused you; and as you are not yet paid for the half of your sufferings, I here give you my hand and word to make up a hundred and fifty pounds more for you; and for this, I will not accept the smallest thanks, as I think it is no more than an act of common honesty. And I, cried Mr. Fenton, I hold myself indebted to you a thousand pounds, my noble Harry, for that single sentiment. That's well, that's well, dada; cried Harry, (heaping up and clapping his hands) I shall now be clear in the world with all my poor creditors!

Thus, dada, continued he, it rejoiced my heart, greatly, to send poor Mr. Vindex away in such triumph; while my tutor and I went two or three doors off, to see a mighty pretty young creature, who was said to be confined with her ancient father.

And

And I will tell you their story, with two or three other stories more, on account of the incidents that happened while we were there, than of any thing else that was wonderful or uncommon in them.

On tapping at the door, we were desired to walk in, and saw a female, with her back to us, weaving bone lace on a cushion; while an elderly man, with spectacles on, read to her in Thomas a Kempis. They both rose to salute us. Mr. Clement then stepped up, and seeing what they were about, cried, God cannot but prosper your work, good people, since you employ your time to his purposes, both on earth and in heaven. As an earnest of his kindness to you, he sends you by us a considerable charity, which you shall receive as soon as you inform us, who, and what you are, and how you came here. Blessed be the messengers of my God, cried out the father, whether they come with happy or with heavy tidings! I say, with old Eli, "It is the Lord, let him do what seemeth him good."

O dada, I was quite charmed, when the daughter turned to me. There was such a sweetness, such a heavenly harmlessness in her face, that I could have kissed her, and kissed her, again and again.

As I had brought a glass and the remainder of our bottle with me, we all got about a board that was half stool and half table, and after a round or two, the good man began his story.

My father's name was Samuel Stern. He had a clear estate of nine hundred and fifty pounds a-year in Suffex, and had, by my mother, three daughters and four sons, of whom I was the second.

My father, unhappily, was a loyalist, and when the troubles broke out between king Charles and the parliament, he took up all the money he could, at any interest, and raised a company at his own cost, which he headed on the part of his royal master.

After some successful skirmishes, his head was split in two by the broad-sword of a trooper, at the battle

battle of Naishby. Immediately all our servants forsook us, each carrying away with him whatever came to hand; and quickly after, the soldiers of the commonwealth came, carried off all the cattle, and left nothing of our house, except the bare walls.

In the mean time, we, poor children, huddled together into the garden, and there separating, ran and crept under bushes and hedges, as so many chickens endeavouring to gain shelter from the kite.

As soon as the noise of the tumult was over, we rose and looked about fearfully; and getting together again, we helped one another through the garden-hedge, and made, as fast as we could, to the cottage of a neighbouring farmer who had been our father's tenant. Here we were received coldly, and fared but very hardly for that night. On the next day, however, in order to get quit of us, as I suppose, the man went among our relations, and prevailed on one to take a son, and on another to take a daughter, till we were all divided among them; and so we entered on a kind of service to our kindred, a service, as I believe, that is found, on experience, to be much harder and more insulting than any service to a stranger.

I forgot to tell you gentlemen, that our mother deceased before our father engaged in arms, inso-much that we became orphans in all respects. I fell to the share of an uncle by my mother's side. He had a small estate of about a hundred and twenty pounds yearly income, with one son, and a daughter whom I thought very lovely.

My uncle appointed me overseer of his labourers, as also his occasional clerk, for casting accounts, and inditing his letters, &c. but when it was intimated to him, that there was a secret liking between his daughter and me, he called me aside. and taking up a book of profane poems, he kissed it and swore,
by

by the contents thereof, that, if ever I married his daughter, he would not give us a groat.

If you ever knew what love was, said he to Mr. Clement, you must know that it breaks over stronger fences than these. In short, we were wedded and turned out of the house, without any thing to live upon, except about the value of twenty pounds in small matters, which had been given to my wife, from time to time, by lady Goodly, her god-mother.

We made the best of our way to London. My wife understood needle-work, and as I knew that my father-in-law was quite irreconcilable, I joined myself to a house-painter, to whom I gave my time for nothing, on condition of his giving me a sight into his business.

In the third year, my dear wife brought this poor creature into the world; but happily, she did not encumber mankind with any more of our wretched and depending progeny.

All our care and delight was fixed on this our little daughter, and we thought nothing of any pains or labour that might serve to introduce her, like herself, into the world.

As soon as Charles the II. had ascended the throne, our relations were fully assured that we should be restored to our ancient rights and possessions; and they contributed, as it were for their own credit, to set us forth in a suitable manner for appearing at court. There accordingly we attended, from time to time, for the space of twelve months, and got a number of woful memorials presented to his majesty; but his majesty was so deeply engaged in his pleasures, or so fearful of offending the enemies of his house, that he gave no attention to our wrongs. There may be also something in the breasts of the great that excites them to acts of bounty, rather than acts of justice; for these, as they apprehend, might be

accepted as matter of debt and not as matter of favour.

Being tired of a fruitless suit, I returned to my former employment, and by industry and frugality, I lived with my little family quite happy and contented.

About ten months ago, two men came to our lodgings. The one was in a rich livery, and having enquired for my daughter, presented her with a note to this effect,—“Lady Diana Templar sends Diana Stern the inclosed bill of twenty-five pounds, in order to put her into some little way of livelihood.”—As my poor dear child had no cause to suspect any fraud or evil intention in the case, she desired the men to return her most humble thanks and duty to her ladyship, and away they went.

As this lady was a distant relation of my wife’s father, my daughter, in a few days, dressed herself in her best, and went to return thanks to her ladyship in person, but was told that she was gone to her seat in the country.

In the mean time she laid out her supposed bounty in furnishing a little front shop, with some millinary wares, and was already beginning to get some custom, when, one evening, two bailiffs entered, laid an action upon her, and taking her up in their arms, hurried her into a coach that drove up to the door.

My wife and I had rushed out, on hearing our child shriek; and seeing a coach set off with her at a great rate, we ran after as fast as we could, shouting and screaming, and crying, stop the coach, stop the coach, a rape, a rape! At length a bold fellow, who was passing, caught one of the horses by the bridle, and, while the coachman lashed at him, he took out his knife and cut the reins in two. A mob then began to gather; whereupon a well-dressed man, who was in the coach, leaped out and made his

his escape: but the coachman was not so lucky; the people pulled him from the box, and having beaten and kicked him, they dragged him through the kennel.

Mean while we got our child out, and then the mob overturned the coach, and jumping upon it, broke and dashed it all to pieces. We then thought that we had nothing further to apprehend, and taking our child between us, we turned back and walked homeward; but alas, we were not permitted to enter; the two bailiffs met us, and producing their writ, again arrested our daughter at the suit, as they said, of Jonathan Delvil, Esq; for the sum of twenty-five pounds which he had lent her on such a day. So they conducted her here, while my wife and I accompanied her, weeping and sobbing all the way.

I then took these poor apartments to cover us from the weather, and as my wife grew suddenly sick and faint, I hastened back to our lodgings, and had our bedding brought hither.

It was now evident that the pretended gift of lady Templar was no other than a diabolical scheme of the villain Delvil, to get the person of my darling within his fangs; and I cursed my own stupidity for not perceiving it at first; but blessed be my God however, in all events, that my lamb was still innocent, was still unfulled.

What with grief and the fright together, my dear wife took to her bed, from whence she never rose, but expired on the fifth day, blessing and pressing her daughter to her bosom. My poor infant then fell as dead beside her mother, and could not be recovered from her fit in many hours; and indeed, it was then the wish and the prayer of my soul, that we might all be laid and forgotten in one grave together.

As soon as my darling was recovered, however, I again wished to live for her sake, that I might not

leave her without a comforter or protector, in the midst of a merciless and wicked world.

In order to pay the nurse-keeper, the doctor, and apothecary, as also to defray the funeral expenses, I left my child with the nurse-keeper, and going to our former lodgings. I sold all her millinary matters at something under a third of prime cost; and having discharged the lodgings and paid my gaol debts, I prepared to lay my precious deposit in the womb of that earth which is one day to render her back incorruptible, to eternity.

When the corpse was carrying out at the door, my child fell once more into fits, and I was divided and quite distracted about what I should do, whether to stay with the living, or pay my duty to the dead. But I will no longer detain you with melancholy matters, since all worldly griefs, with all worldly joys also, must shortly be done away.

As soon as I understood that lady Templar was returned to town, I waited upon her, and giving her an abridgment of our manifold misfortunes, I produced the note that had been written in her name; but she coldly replied, that it was not her hand, and that she was not answerable for the frauds or villainies of others.

Meanwhile, my dear girl accused herself as the cause of all our calamities, and pined away on that account, as pale as the sheet she lay in. She was also so enfeebled, by her faintish and sick fits, that she was not able to make a third of her usual earnings; and as I, on my part, was also disqualified from labouring in my profession, since I did not dare to leave my child alone and unsheltered, we were reduced to a state of the greatest extremity.

One day, word was brought me that a gentleman, a few doors off, desired to speak with me; and as they, who are sinking, catch at any thing for their support, my heart fluttered in the hope of some happy reverse. Accordingly I followed the messenger.

messenger. His appearance in dress and person was altogether that of the gentleman.

He ordered all others out of the room, and requesting me to sit beside him, in a half-whispering voice he began: I am come, Mr. Stern, from one whom you have great reason to account your greatest enemy; I come from Mr. Delvil, at whose suit your daughter now lies in prison. I started—Be patient, Sir, he said. He knows your distresses, he knows all your wants, he knows also that he is the author of them; yet I tell you that he feels them, as if they were his own; and that it was not his enmity, but his love that occasioned them.

He depends on his old uncle Dimmock for a vast fortune in expectation. He saw your daughter, and loved her; he saw her again, and loved her to madness. He enquired her family, her character, and found that he had nothing to expect from any licentious proposal. He feared, however, that all must love her, as he did, and to prevent other pirates, he made use of the stratagem which, contrary to his intentions, has brought you here. He never meant any thing dishonourable by your daughter. Had he carried her clear off, you might all have been happy together at this day; and if you consent, he will marry her here, in the presence of a few witnesses, who shall be sworn to secrecy till his uncle's death; and he will instantly pay you down three hundred pounds, in recompence for your sufferings, and will settle one hundred pounds annuity on your child for life.

I must own that, to one in my circumstances, this proposal had something very tempting in it. But who is this Mr. Delvil? said I, I know him not, I never saw him.—I am the man, Sir, said he. I would have discharged my action as I came to this place; but I dare not permit your daughter to get out of my custody; for, at the loss of my fortune, at the loss of my life, I am determined that
no

no other man living shall possess her. I then promised him that I would make a faithful narration to my child of all that had passed, but told him, at the same time, that I would wholly subscribe to her pleasure; and so we parted.

As soon as I represented this matter to my Diana, O no, my papa, she cried, it is impossible, it never can be; I would do any thing, suffer any thing, but this, for your relief. Would you act the marriage of the lamb and the wolf in the fable? If such have been the consequences of this gentleman's affection for us, what have we not to expect from the effects of his aversion? I would prefer any kind of death, to a life with such a man. And then my mother, she cried, and burst into tears, my dear mother whom he has murdered! though he were worth half the world, and would marry me publicly in the face of the other half; it will not be, it cannot be, indeed, my papa!

Hereupon I writ Mr. Delvil almost a literal account of my daughter's answer. It is nearly five weeks since this happened, and we have not heard any thing further from him.

In this time, however, we got acquainted with a family at the next door, whose converse has been a great consolation to us. There is a father and mother with seven small children, boys and girls; they are very worthy people, and of noble descent; but how they contrive to live at all I cannot conceive, for they have no visible means of making a penny. Had we not known them, we should have thought ourselves the poorest of all creatures. We must own them more deserving of your charity than we are.

Here poor Mr. Stern ended; and you can't think, dada, how my heart leapt with love toward him, on his recommending others as more deserving than himself. So I resolved, at once, what to do, and taking two 50l. notes from my pocket-book, you shall
not

not be under the necessity, Mr. Stern, says I, of marrying your pretty lamb here to the ugly wolf; so here is fifty pounds to pay your action, and fees, and other small debts.

On taking the note, dada, he looked at it very earnestly; and when he saw it was a true note, he opened his eyes and his mouth so wide, and stood so stiff, without stirring hand or foot, that he put me in mind of Lot's wife who was turned into a pillar of salt. However, I did not seem to mind him, but turning to his daughter, and shewing her the other note, Miss Diana, says I, here is fifty pounds for you also, in order to set you up in your little shop again; but you shall not have it without a certain condition. What condition master, said she, smiling? The condition, says I, of putting your arms about my neck, and giving me one or two sweet kisses. She then looked earnestly at me with eyes swimming with pleasure; and starting suddenly to me, and catching me to her bosom, she kissed my lips and my forehead, and my head, again and again; and then set up as lamentable and loud a cry, as if her father had lain a corpse before her.

Mr. Stern then lifted up his eyes, and dropping on his knees, O my God he cried, how bountiful art thou to a wretch who is not worthy the least of all thy mercies! Hereupon the daughter turned, and seeing the posture of her father, she fell on her knees before him, and throwing her arms about him, he folded her in his also, and they wept plentifully upon each other.

How comes it, dada, that crying should be so catching? However it be, Mr. Clement and I could not contain; and I shall love him the better during life for the tears that he shed on that occasion.

On hearing a smart rapping, Mr. Stern rose and opened the door, where a footman, almost breathless, delivered him a letter. The letter was to the purpose that Mr. Delvil was ill of a quinsy, that he
had

had but a few hours to live, and requested Mr. Stern to bring his daughter to him, that, by marriage, he might give her a lawful title to his fortune. No, papa, cried Diana, living or dead, nothing shall ever bribe me to give my hand to a man who has had a hand in the death of my dearest mother.

Mr. Clement, however, thought it adviseable that Mr. Stern should attend the messenger, to see if Mr. Delvil was really ill, or whether this might not be some new-contrived treachery.

This was a day of successes to poor Mr. Stern. We had promised to stay with his Diana till his return; and he had not been long gone till some one tapped at the door. I opened it, and saw an exceeding old and reverend man; he was dressed all in black, and his white head looked like snow on the feathers of the raven. Is Tom Stern here? said he. No, Sir, said I, he is gone into town. I thought he was a prisoner. No, Sir, it is not he, but his daughter, who is under confinement. Will you give a feeble old man leave to sit with you, gentlemen? and so down he sat. Come here to me, child, says he to Diana, are you a daughter of Tom Stern? I am, Sir, so please you. And what was your mother's name? Ann Roche, Sir; but, alas! she is not living, I was the cause of her death; she broke her heart, good Sir, on my being put to gaol. I hope, child, said the old gentleman, that you were not imprisoned for any thing that was naughty. No Sir, no, cried Mr. Clement, it was her honesty alone that brought and kept her here; had she been less virtuous, she might have been at liberty, and flaunting about in her coach.

The old man then put on his spectacles, and ordering her to draw nearer, he took a hand in each of his, and looking intently in her face, What is your name, my dear? said he; Diana, honoured Sir. That is a pretty and chaste name,

name, for an unchristian name. Indeed, Diana, you are a sweet babe, and the prettiest little prisoner that ever I saw. I will pay all your debts, and give you a thousand pounds over, if you will come along with me, and be my prisoner, Diana. Ah, Sir, cried the girl, it is too much to have broken the heart of one parent already; I would not leave my dear father for any man with all the money in all the world. You do not leave your father, he cried, by going with me, Diana. I am your true father, the father of Nanny Roche, the father of her who bore you, your own grandfather, my Diana.

Here she sunk on her knees, between his knees, begging and beseeching his blessing; while his hands and eyes were lifted in prayer over her. He then raised her, and placing her gently on his knee, clasped her in his aged arms; while she threw her's about his neck, and joining her cheek to his, sobbed aloud, and poured her tears into his bosom. The old gentleman, however, did not express his concern by word, or sob, or even any change of his countenance; and yet his tears fell fast, down his reverend and delightful features, upon his grandchild.

This, dada, was a very pleasing, though a very affecting sight. As soon as the height of their passion was something abated, Miss Diana turned her eye toward me, and said, You were pleased, my grandpapa, to promise that you would pay my debts; but that is done already. This angel here was sent to prevent all others; and he further presented me with this bill of 50l. to set me up in a better shop than I kept before.

I rejoice, cried the old man, I rejoice to find that so much of heaven is still left upon earth. But you, my Diana, are now in a condition rather to give charity than receive it from any. Your dear uncle Jeremy, who traded to the West-Indies,

lately died of the small-pox on his passage homeward. You are the heir of his fortunes, and the heir of my fortune; you are the whole and sole lady of all our possessions. But, tell me, how much did this young gentleman advance in your favour? A hundred pounds, Sir.

He then took out a banker's note of a hundred pounds, and having offered it to me, I did not dare to refuse it, for fear of offending the honour of the respectable old gentleman; so I held it in my hand after a doubting manner. My dear Miss Diana, says I, I will not be put to the pain of taking this back again, but on the condition of your telling me to whom I shall give it? O, she cried out instantly, to the babies, to the sweet babies at the next door! I wish to heaven I had as much more to add to it for their sakes.

I then enquired the name of her favourite family at the next door, and being told that it was Ruth, I looked over my list, and found that Mr. Ruth was in for above seven hundred pounds. This grieved me very much, as such a sum nearly amounted to the half of our whole stock. However, I comforted myself with the hope that God would send some one else, to make up to this poor family what should be wanting on my part.

Mr. Stern just then returned. I beg pardon, said he, gentlemen, for detaining you so long, but I could not avoid it. The unhappy man is actually dying a very terrible death, indeed, in his full strength, and almost in his full health, stifling and gasping for air, which the swelling of his glands will not suffer to pass.

As soon as I entered, he beckoned to me, and put this paper, sealed, into my hand. And again, observing that I was agitated and deeply concerned for the state under which he laboured, he reached out his hand to me, and grasping my right hand, put this ring upon my finger.—This paper contains,

tains, under his hand and seal, a discharge of the action which he laid upon my daughter, as also a conveyance to us, of the cash notes inclosed, amounting to three hundred pounds, in consideration, as he recites, of our losses and unjust sufferings. And so, my dear master Fenton, I here return you your 100l. with all possible acknowledgments, and a sense of the obligation that will never leave me during life.

Sir, said I, you must excuse me, I am already paid. That gentleman, yonder, compelled me to accept of the very sum you offer.

Mr. Stern then started, and turning, he saw his uncle; and, eyeing him inquisitively, at length recollected who he was. He then stepped up, and falling on his knees before him, O, Sir, he cried, your pardon, your pardon! 'Tis all I presume to ask, I dare not hope for your blessing.

Tom, said the old gentleman, I wanted to be even with you; I wanted to seduce your daughter, as you seduced mine. But your daughter, Tom, though come of very rebellious parents, would not be seduced. Howsomever, as I have taken a liking to her, she must come along with me, whether she will or no. And, as Jacob said to Joseph concerning Ephraim and Manasseh, she shall be mine and not thine, Tom; and my name and the name of my fathers shall be named upon her, according to her inheritance. But if you have any affection for this my child, Tom, and are unwilling to part with her, you may follow her and welcome.

Soon after we got up, and having congratulated this happy family on the blessing of their meeting and reconciliation, I stepped to the old gentleman, and catching him about the neck, tenderly took my leave of him, as I did also of Mr. Stern. But when I went to take leave of the fair Diana, she drew some steps backward, and her eyes and sweet features beginning to swell, she again run forward, and

and catching me in her dear arms, O, my darling, my darling, my darling, she cried, am I then going to lose you, it may be never to see you more! were it but once in a week, in a month, in a year, to behold you, even that would keep me alive for all the remainder. O my best, my most generous, my first preserver! it is you who might be the seducer, who might make me and others run after you bare-foot. But if we must part, my little angel, do but promise to know me in heaven, and there your poor Diana will meet you, never to part any more.

What could I say or do, dada, in answer to the dear girl? my heart swelled, almost to bursting, while she caressed and wept over me. At length, with words, as well as my tears would give me leave to pronounce them, I demanded the name of the place to which she was going, and promised to pay her a visit as soon as possibly I could. We then parted very melancholy, notwithstanding all our success; and, going out, I wiped my eyes, and begged Mr. Clement to order tea and coffee, with a comfortable entertainment for the family at the next door, while I should go in and introduce myself as well as I could.

Having tapped gently at the door, it was opened by a little ragged boy of about five years old. Mrs. Ruth sat full in my view, and her three little daughters stood before her, while she examined them in the old Testament questions of who was the first man, and the wisest man, and the strongest man, and the oldest man, and above all the man after God's own heart?

Mrs. Ruth was a fine woman, and had a great deal of humble dignity about her. I bowed to her as I entered, and going familiarly up, I took her by the hand and kissed it. Allow me, madam, said I, to introduce a little neighbour to you: I lodge within a few doors, and shall think myself happy in being acquainted in your family. Alas, my dear,
says

says she, there are very few who seek acquaintance with calamity. They, who wish to relieve it, seek acquaintance with it, madam.

Having eyed me all over, with an earnest kind of surprise, You look, my love, said she, to be very good natured, and I dare say will be very charitable when you come to have the ability. The little ability I have, madam, shall be strained for your service. In the mean time, pray pardon the freedom I have taken in ordering tea and coffee into your room, with some cakes and sweetmeats for these pretty misses. I will only trouble you, madam, with one guest more; it is Mr. Clement, my tutor, who, good man, has been no stranger to poverty or distress.

Here she called Mr. Ruth from an inner-room, Give me leave, my dear, says she, to introduce a young stranger to you: from what world he comes, I know not; but I am sure that he is not wholly of the world that we have lived in.

Mr. Ruth's countenance spoke at once the meekness of Moses and the patience of Job. Having saluted, we both sat down. Mr. Ruth, said I, I have a message to you and your lady from your sweet pretty neighbour, Miss Diana Stern. In token of her respect and affection for you, she presents you with this cash note of a hundred pounds. Diana Stern! cried out Mr. Ruth, why, master, she is nearly as poor as ourselves. By no means, Sir, I assure you; her grandfather is come to town, she is worth several thousands, besides a considerable estate to which she is heiress. O, the dear creature, the dear angel! cried Mrs. Ruth, I will instantly go and pay her my acknowledgments; so up she got and out she run, before I could prevent her.

As soon as she was gone, Mr. Ruth, says I, my dada is much fonder of me than I deserve. He has given me a little money to dispose of, at pleasure,
among

among the confined debtors ; and though I may not have enough to answer your occasions, yet my dada is so very good and so very generous, that if you give me the sum of your debts, with the story of your distresses, his heart, I am sure, will melt, and he will set you clear in the world.

He made no answer, however, to this my offer, but, lifting up his eyes, he cried, Well mightest thou say, great Saviour of the simple, "Suffer little children to come unto me, "for of such is the kingdom of heaven." O thou babe of the manger, "thou first born of many brethren," here, indeed, is a dear and true little brother of thine ; but he speaks in his simplicity, and not according to knowledge ! Then, turning toward me, Can you guess, my darling, said he, what you undertake to do for me ? I question if the charities of all this nation would be sufficient, when united, to effect my deliverance. Nothing, nothing but the arm of the Almighty can do it. He will do it, indeed, in death ; but what then shall become of my wife and seven infants ? that truly is terrible ; is worse than death to think of !

While we were speaking, two sweet little fellows came in, the eldest very nearly of my size, but both clad in very thin and poor-looking apparel. Having kneeled for their father's blessing, they slipped behind us ; and turning my head to observe them, I was quite ashamed, and drew it back again, on perceiving that the poor things were unlading their pockets of old crusts and broken meats, which I supposed they had begged for the family.

Mrs. Ruth just then returned, and her countenance looked something dejected. She took her seat by her husband, and continuing a while silent, she put her handkerchief before her eyes, and began in broken words, Can you guess, my dear, said she, what sort of a creature this is whom we have got among us ? This little heavenly impostor,
to

to lighten our obligation, would have persuaded us that the hundred pounds was the gift of another; but it is all his own bounty, it is all his own graciousness. Come my daughters, come my children, kneel down and return your thanks to this your patron, your benefactor, your little father here!

O dada, you would have pitied me sadly, had you seen me at this time. The poor dear things came, all in a cluster, pressing, and catching, and clasping, and clinging about me; while my love, and my very heart was torn, as it were, to fitters among them. So I took them, one by one in my arms, and kissed and embraced them very cordially, calling them my brothers and sisters. I then took out another hundred pound note, and giving it to the eldest of the daughters, Here, my dear, said I, I always loved the little misses better than the little masters; here is for yourself and your sisters, to clothe you in a way more becoming your family. And then taking a note, of equal value, I gave it to the eldest son, for himself and his brothers, as I said to help to educate them in a manner more agreeable to the house from whence they came.

Mr. and Mrs. Ruth looked so astonished at me, and at each other, that, for a while, they were not able to utter a syllable. And just as they began to make their acknowledgments, I cried, Hush, hush! here comes my tutor.

Mr. Clement just then entered, followed by several servants, who carried a tea equipage, cold fowl, baked meats, with pastries, and some wine.

Having introduced Mr. Clement, we all got round the table, and after tea and a further regale, I besought Mr. Ruth to give us the story of his misfortunes.

My father, said he, was baron of Frankford. He left my brother with the title, four thousand
five

five hundred pounds a-year, entailed however upon me, in case of his dying without male issue. And he left me a small inheritance of four hundred pounds yearly, to support in some measure the appearance of a gentleman.

As my concern bordered on my brother's estate, we saw one another every day, and continued, for several years, in strait and tender amity.

Being both invited, one day, to dine with other company, at the house of a neighbour called Mr. Heartless, a question happened to be started over the bottle, whether the method of setting an egg on end was originally the invention of Columbus, or whether it was communicated to him by some other; and I unhappily espoused the opinion that was opposite to that of my brother.

Now, though the question was not worth the very shell of the egg about which we debated, yet we entered as warmly into it as though a province had lain at stake: for it is not truth, or instruction, that disputants seek after; it is victory alone, that is the object of their contention.

After some warm words and personal retorts had passed between my brother and me, he started into sudden passion, and gave me the lie; whereupon, reaching across the table, I gave him a tap on the cheek with the flat of my fingers: then, rising furiously from his seat, he swore a fearful oath, and cried, I will ruin you, Harry; though it cost me my estate, I will ruin you, Harry Ruth, with all who are yours.

The very next day he mustered his tenants and labourers, and coming upon me with a little army, he laid most of my fences level with the earth.

When I complained of this violence to my next neighbours, Mr. Heartless and Mr. Hollow, they protested they would stand by me against such outrageous proceedings to the last of their fortunes. They then advanced me, between them, five hundred

dred pounds for the purpose. I immediately commenced suit against my lord's tenants. But though I cast them all with costs, I unhappily found that nearly all my money was sunk in the contest.

Meantime, scarce a day passed wherein I was not served with a subpoena from Chancery, to answer such or such a bill, to which my brother had procured me to be made a party. And he also entered a suit against me, himself, in order to invalidate my father's will, whereby I claimed my little patrimony.

When I told this to my friend Mr. Hollow, he broke into a loud laugh. Your title! cried he; the world cannot invalidate your title, Mr. Ruth; I will let you have a thousand pounds upon it tomorrow; and this I was under the necessity of accepting soon after.

Contention serves, with mutual hands, to shut every door against reconciliation. The more I had loved my brother, the more I now detested him. Instead of any submission or overture to appease him, my lips uttered, in daily invectives, the overflowings of my heart; as I also was assured that, on his part, he wished me nothing less than eternal perdition. Thus we burned, on both sides, with unquenchable fire, and the kingdom of Satan was fully opened within us.

At length, my body was imprisoned, at the suit of my neighbour Heartless, for 750l. and my lands were taken under execution, at the suit of my neighbour Hollow, for the sum of 2000l. But I soon was informed that all this money was my brother's: who had advanced it from time to time, to those his clandestine correspondents, in order to hasten and deepen my destruction. When I understood this, I raged, I was all on fire; and I took a horrid pleasure in the notion of having the fangs of a tyger, that I might tear my brother piecemeal, and my false friends limb from limb, and feast my
spirit

spirit on their pangs, and mine eyes on their carnage.

But when I turned a look on my wife and seven infants, grief joined with rage to tear me by a double distraction. I cursed the lot to which I was appointed upon earth; and I should have sought some desperate means of putting an end to my torments and existence together, but that I dreaded, by my death, to give pleasure to my brother, ten times more than I dreaded the pain of death itself.

O, my friends, had all that ever were fainted, come and preached to me, the peace of our Lord Christ at that season, it would have been no more than beating the air, or striving with so many sponges to make an impression on a block of marble. It is distress alone that, by oppression, makes impression; that preaches the internal doctrine of sensible mortification, and humbles a proud spirit, by plucking away all its props.

At first, I was a worm under the foot of my God. I turned, and struggled, and writhed, and fought with all my force against the crusher. But, alas! all was in vain; he was too mighty for me; and opposition served only to add to my anguish.

At length I was compelled to acquiesce, rather through the want of power than the want of will to resist. And I lay, as it were, without motion, under his dispensations; at the same time that my heart reproached him, in secret.

Having sold all our moveables, and even our wearing apparel for sustenance, we were reduced to the necessity of sending our eldest boys to beg fragments of victuals at kitchen-windows, to keep us from utterly starving. This I held to be such a further shame and disgrace as stung my soul to the quick; I therefore began to kick against these pricks also; but finding that, the more I spurned, the stronger I was held and pressed into the dust, I
gave

gave up all resistance, and contented myself with grieving and weeping under the hand of the Almighty.

From hence I gradually sunk into a state of resigned serenity, which, although without sunshine, was yet without disturbance. My fury smoothed its crest, my passions subsided, and I felt nothing more of rancour against my brother, or resistance against my God.

The activity of the soul will find itself employment. As I had now no further prospect or concern upon earth, I began to turn my thoughts and attention toward heaven. I locked myself into yonder closet. I threw myself into the dust. I have sinned, I cried, I have greatly sinned, O God! I am nothing, I am crushed even lower than the nothing that I am; spare, spare me from a deeper perdition, I beseech thee!

I felt that my prayer was heard: peace descended upon me like dew upon the night; the day star began gradually to dawn to my soul; the dark kingdom of Satan gave way before the kingdom of the Son of Light and Love; and I would no more have entertained any one of my former passions, than I would have taken burning coals and have buttoned them up in my bosom.

I was greatly delighted, dada, with this part and some more of Mr. Ruth's story; and I got him to repeat it over and over, that I might remember it the better.

I now, continued he, I now pitied my brother, as much as ever I had hated him. I grieved for having caused the loss of his peace. I wished to restore it to him. I wrote a penitential acknowledgment of my faults. I besought his pardon, in the humblest manner, for the unfortunate blow. I subscribed to the justice of my consequent sufferings; and I sent my son, here, to attend his lordship with my lowly address.

The

The triumph, which this humiliation gave to my brother, supplied him with patience to go through my memorial. But then conceiving, as I suppose, that it was dictated by mercenary meanness and hypocrisy, he tore it to pieces and dashed it into the fire. Then, returning to my child the box which had so inflamed the soul of his lordship, he kicked my poor little fellow out of his house.

My child came home to me weeping sadly; but I consoled him the best I could, and mingled my tears with his; not in any resentment for the treatment received, but through grief for the inveteracy of my unhappy brother. O my God, I cried, I no longer repine at my abasement, at the weight of my sufferings and mortifications; I bless thee for them O God; they have proved my best friends, my most salutary physicians. Cruel and stern, indeed, is the porter who stands at the iron gate of pain; but O, it opens upon regions of inward delight; for he who clothed himself with the cross, is all glorious within!

My happy experience of this truth opened, for me, a new prospect into the mystery of God's dispensation to mortals; and threw a number of shining lights on those very articles of gospel-redemption, which had formerly appeared to me so exceptionable and gloomy. If God, said I to myself, hath suffered man to fall, he hath also provided for him every possible means of recovery and restoration.

Wherefore, when sin came into the world, God also sent suffering, its inseparable attendant, to be a cure and an antidote to the poison thereof. If sin, therefore, hath thrust the kingdom of heaven from within us, suffering comes, as God's forerunner; it relaxes and unfolds the brazen gates of our polluted temple, that Christ our Righteousness may enter, the very hem of whose garment is Salvation to every soul that lays hold upon it.

Here

Here I took Mr. Ruth about the neck, and kissing him, said, that I was sure my dada would be willing to pay his whole debt, in return for the sweet instructions which he had given to his Harry. You speak of your dada, my dear, said he, as though he were the representative of God in the gospel, who forgave to his servant ten thousand talents. What you have given me already, master, is beyond any human bounty that ever I heard of. I shall therefore lay by two of these notes, till I am better informed how far your good father may be satisfied with the donation.

Soon after, we took leave, for the present, of this honourable family. We then went among the other principal debtors, whose distresses indeed were great, though their stories except one, had little singular in them. In order to make our money go as far as we could, we hurried here and there, through the town, compounding with the several creditors, from eight to ten and twelve and fifteen shillings in the pound; so that, for about six hundred pounds, we discharged a number who were indebted to the amount of a thousand.

On Tuesday about noon, in the last week, I stepped to Mr. Ruth's, to see if the family had been decently clad, agreeable to my request. There I found him and his four sons clothed in warm and clean, though very coarse apparel: and he told me, that his wife had gone abroad with her three daughters, in order to put them also into a suitable condition.

While I sat with him, a young woman came in, of a very genteel appearance, though in a plain dress. Don't you remember the girl, Sir, said she to Mr. Ruth, who used to come to you, over night, in a green kerchief and a little red mantle? I should be very ungrateful, indeed, said he, if any change of dress could conceal from my remembrance that sweet and charitable countenance. O

Sir,

Sir, she cried, the few shillings that I brought you, from time to time, came from a very affectionate hand, though from a hand you would little suspect of any affection toward you; they came from your loving niece Belinda Ruth, who has shed many a shower of tears on your misfortunes. May heaven be her portion, cried out the good man, since earth has nothing equal to so much goodness! Indeed, Sir, continued the girl, the little that your niece sent you was procured with much difficulty and danger to herself; for from the time that, on her knees and with a deluge of tears, she petitioned her father in your behalf, he kept a watchful eye over her, and took from her all family trusts; so that she had nothing wherewith to supply you, except the price of some cast gowns, and of other little matters that she feigned to have lost. Moreover, my lord swore vehemently, that if ever she furnished you with the value of a farthing, or kept any kind of correspondence with you or with yours, he would disown and turn her into the public streets.

You alarm me greatly, cried out Mr. Ruth. Is any thing amiss, has any thing happened to my dear child? She was a lovely little lamb, a little angel from her cradle; though I should not know her now, if she stood erect before me. I hope, I say — tell me — proceed, I beseech you!

There was a servant, Sir, a man whom your niece thought very faithful, and therefore entrusted with the secret of my coming to you, that he might attend and see me safe back again. This fellow presuming on the confidence that was placed in him, would, this morning, have taken indecent liberties with his young mistress. This she resented in a becoming manner, and threatened to complain of his insolence to her father. The revengeful villain instantly run, and told the affair to his lord with many aggravations, as though his daughter was robbing

robbing him of all his substance. Thereupon she was hastily called, and having in part confessed the charge, my lord drew his sword in his fury, whereupon, giving a shriek and a sudden spring, she got out of his presence, and has sent me to know, Sir, if you will be pleased to receive her?

Yes, cried Mr. Ruth, to my bosom, to my heart; with the same pleasure and welcome that a convict receives pardon on the hour of execution.

Just then Mrs. Ruth entered, with her three daughters, who, running up to their father, dropped together on their knees before him for a blessing.

While his hands and eyes were raised in prayer over them, the young stranger stepped earnestly up, and falling on her knees beside the daughters, she broke into tears, and cried aloud, Bless me, bless me also, O my father! I am your niece, your Belinda. My father is no more! Yours, my lord, is the title, yours all the possession! I now, in my turn, depend on your bounty for a morsel of bread. My brother, my brother dead! exclaimed Mr. Ruth. He is, my lord, she replied; he was suffocated by his rising choler, and expired on the spot.

While the young lady spoke, Mrs. Ruth looked, as quite terrified by the tidings of such a sudden elevation; and clapping her hands together, and lifting her eyes, she cried, It cannot be, it is impossible! Ours the title, ours the fortune!—O my God!—O my husband!—O my children!—and down she dropped.

C H A P. XVI.

WHILE Harry was speaking, Ned saw a woman standing before one of the windows; and looking earnestly at her, he gave a sudden jump, and dancing about, cried, O Sir, Sir, my mammy, my mammy! there's my mammy, as sure as day!

Run, Ned, instantly, cried Mr. Fenton, and call James to me. James, yonder's the woman who stole Ned from his parents; have an eye to her, do not let her escape! Order Frank to take a horse and go with all speed to Mr. and Mrs. Fielding, that they may come and know, of a surety, whether Ned is their child or not——Stay a moment; as soon as you have given Frank his orders, take the rest of the servants and lay hold on this bad woman; bring her into the house by force, and confine her in one of the back rooms till Mr. Fielding arrives. By all Ned's account, she must be a very sad creature, and deserves no favour.

James went out with alacrity upon his commission; and having executed matters with his accustomed punctuality, he returned to the company.

O, Sir! cried James, it is impossible that this woman should be Ned's mammy as he called her. This is some unhappy decayed gentlewoman, as innocent of the fact, I dare answer, as the child unborn. I am sorry, with all my heart, that I had her used so roughly. Beside, Sir, she is so deaf, that she can't answer to any thing of which she may be accused.

When we took her in hand she was terribly frightened. Come, says I, mistress, you must now give an account of all your wickedness.—Ennis, says

says she, Ennis? No; but Enfield; five miles beyond Enfield, with the Rev. Mr. Catharines—I know nothing, said I aloud of your Enfields or your Catharines; but I tell you that you must now answer for the life that you have led. Dead, dead, says she, God forbid! A dear and a good master he was to me, I am sure. I have lived with him these five years; and he gave me money enough to bear my charges; but I fell sick at Saint Alban's and spent all; and I have been these three days creeping along, and begging wherewithal to keep life in me on the way.

As you say, James, cried Mr. Fenton, this account seems pretty feasible; a deaf servant however is something uncommon. Go to her yourself, Ned, and observe her more exactly; for, if what she says has any truth in it, it is impossible she should be your mammy.

Ned accordingly went, but returned under evident confusion and difficulty. I don't know what to think, Sir, of this matter, cries Ned. When I look at the gentlewoman's face, I could swear, twenty times over, to every feature; but when I look at her dress and manners, I could again almost swear against her face.

Ned's perplexity added greatly to Mr. Fenton's curiosity. He got up in haste, and went in person to inspect the party. When he entered, he saw a young woman who looked very pale and sickly, but of a genteel appearance, and neatly though plainly dressed. She cast upon him a sensible and penetrating look, and curtsying to him, with downcast eyes, Sir, said she, your presence tells me that you are master here. I know not for what offence your people have confined me; but if it is on any suspicion of misbehaviour, I have here the certificate of a worthy man and a great saint, who vouches at least for the innocence of

my conduct.—Here she presented him with a paper that contained the following words:

“I certify, that the bearer hath served me upward of five years, in quality of house-keeper and intendant of my family; and that she is a young woman of distinguished piety and merit, and departs, at her own desire, on some business to London. Given under my hand,” &c.

MARMADUKE CATHARINES, Cl.

On reading this, Mr. Fenton bowed, and made a motion with his hand for her to sit down. He then took a pen and paper that lay beside him, and wrote to the purpose, that he requested her to allow him to detain her certificate for about an hour; after which he would return it, and endeavour to make her amends for the unbecoming treatment which his people had given her.

On casting her eye over the paper, she made a low curtsy, and said, I shall willingly attend, Sir, during your pleasure; but hope, in the mean time, that your charity will afford me a morsel or two of the fragments of your last meal.

Mr. Fenton then pulled a bell, and having ordered some cold meats and white wine to be served, he bowed, and withdrew to his company.

Ned, said he as he entered, this woman is just as much the empress of Russia as she is your mammy. Here, Mr. Clement, look at this certificate; I have no reason to doubt the truth of the character given in it, for her person and manners are every way conformable. I am sorry at heart, that I sent in such a hurry for Mr. and Mrs. Fielding; I have thereby raised a sort of expectation in them, and it may be very mortifying to have that expectation so suddenly and so wholly defeated.

Some time after, a coach and six frothing horses drove up to the door, and Mr. and Mrs. Fielding alighted,

alighted, with a kind of impatience and trepidation apparent in their countenance. As soon as Mr. Fenton had duly received and seated them; My dear madam, says he to Mrs. Fielding, I think myself very unhappy in having given you a deal of unnecessary trouble. My poor Ned, here, has been utterly mistaken in the person of the woman whom he took to be his mammy. The certificate of her certain residence bears a date even previous to that in which we found him; and her deportment is more than a thousand testimonies against her being of the wandering or dissolute class of people. Be pleased, Mr. Fielding, to look over this certificate; I think it has all the marks of its being genuine.

The moment that Mr. Fielding cast his eye on the paper, A well known character indeed! he exclaimed. It is the hand of Mr. Catharines, my tutor, my friend; the man of the world, excepting yourself, Mr. Fenton, for whom I have the dearest respect and affection. No question can be made of any thing to which he sets his affirmative.

Alas, cried Mrs. Fielding, then all the hopes we had conceived must again be cast aside. Here comes our nurse too, poor woman, in great haste; I sent her word that we had found the person whom we suspected to have stolen our child, and desired that she would meet me here directly.

While Mrs. Fielding spoke, nurse entered panting, and almost breathless; and without saluting or taking any notice of the company, Where, she hastily cried, where is the boy, madam, whom you suppose to be your child?

Ah! nurse, said Mrs. Fielding, we were quite mistaken in the woman whom we suspected to be the kidnapper, and so that affair is all over again.

I have nothing to say, cried nurse, to this woman or t'other woman; but you must not have another body's child put upon you. If he is indeed

your son, I shall know him in an instant; I should know him from all the children that ever were born. Why, nurse, cried Mrs. Fielding, eagerly, do you know of any natural mark, or mole, or spot, by which you could guess at him? He had no such spot upon him, madam; but, if he be a living boy, he has a mark of my own making, that never will out; and that's the reason that I never dared to tell you of it. What mark nurse, what mark? tell me instantly, I beg you.

Why, madam, you must know as how the weather was very cold, it being twelfth day in Christmas holidays. So you and my master were from home on visiting, and I had a rousing fire down, and my child stood by my knee, being just then twelve months nineteen days old, and as sturdy a fellow, of his age and inches, as any could desire to see. So the cat, all at once, threw down some crockery ware behind me. Up I started, to be sure, and run to save the vessels; but, hearing my child scream, I turned much nimbler back again, and found him fallen with his little neck against the upper bar of the grate. It was well that I did not die on the spot, for then he must have died too. So I whipt him up in my arms, but he shrieked and roared terribly. So I got some softening cream and spread it over the burn, and I put a plaister upon that again; and I covered the place, from day to day, so well with his cap, that neither you nor my master knew any thing of the matter. But the shape of his hurt went so deep into my heart and into my memory, that, as I was saying, and still say, I should know him by it again among all the children in all the world.

Go then, my dear nurse, cried Mrs. Fielding, go immediately, and examine if this boy has your mark upon him. Is this the master, madam, whom you suspect to be your son? It is, nurse, it is; my heart

heart took a liking to him the first moment I saw him; he too was stolen from his parents, and may as well be my son as the son of another.

Here nurse made a hasty step or two toward Ned, but, suddenly stopping and turning pale, Ah! madam, she cried, I wish you would go and try yourself; the wound, if he has it, is just under his right ear; for if I should find, indeed, that he is my very child, I shall certainly run mad on the very spot for joy. I dare not try, nurse, I dare not try for the world, said Mrs. Fielding; I am already all of a tremble, I know not how.

Nurse, then plucking up a little resolution, stepped suddenly to Ned, and turned up his hair; when, giving a loud scream, she had just the power to cry out, My child, my child, my child! and dropped down in an anguishing fit of hysterics.

Mrs. Fielding, on hearing her nurse cry out, rose hastily from her chair, and would have gone to embrace her son, but falling instantly back she fainted away. The poor nurse, however, was not so happy. She broke forth, at times, into convulsive peals of laughter that made the house ring; and again she fell into fits of weeping, so outrageous and bitterly desolate, as no heart under the temper of adamant could support.

While the family were all in bustle, applying remedies to their patients, Mrs. Fielding recovered, and hearing the cries of her nurse, she went and kneeled down by her, and wept with her and over her, while her tears proved a seasonable restorative to herself.

As soon as Mr. Fielding found that his lady was well recovered, he turned to Ned, and lifting his hair, observed the remarkable seam that the burn had made. It is, it is my child! he tenderly cried. O my God, how is this? wherein have I deserved thy smallest notice or regard, that thou shouldst

shouldest thus visit me with thy wonders, and by thy mercies put me to confusion of face?

Here Ned kneeled respectfully down for a blessing, which his father silently called upon him with lifted hands and eyes. He then raised him, and sitting down, took him fondly to his bosom. Thou art, thou art my son, my beloved son, he cried; my first and my last, the only offspring of my bowels! Thou shalt no more be a wanderer, no more be a beggar, my babe. Thrice blessed be our meeting, and tenfold blessed thy future fortune! O that our lives, my child, might be made one whole oblation to him from whom this amazing salvation hath come!

By this time, the nurse's distemper was greatly abated, though she still continued extremely low and feeble, and did not seem to recollect, except by faint glimmerings, any matter that had passed. Mr. Fielding then proposed to take her to town, to the physicians; observing, that there was room enough for her and Ned in their carriage; and as Mrs. Fielding made no exception, the coach was ordered to turn directly to the door.

Poor Ned, during this time, was as a person, who fluctuated between the dread of leaving known and certain enjoyments, and the hopes of possessing somewhat that he had not yet tasted.

Mr. Fielding then stepped up, in a kind of quick rapture, to Mr. Fenton. He caught him in his arms; My dearest Sir, he cried, I love, I respect, I revere you, even next to my God! What can I return you? what shall I say to you? All that I am, or have, sinks out of sight from your benefits.—I am blessed, my dear Sir, I am blessed beyond expression, replied Mr. Fenton, in being made an humble instrument of happiness to a worthy man.—O Sir, cried Mr. Fielding, what events next to miraculous! we came to your door, but we were not permitted to pass; our carriage
broke

broke for the purpose; you then told us of this foundling; but what likelihood that among millions he should happen to be ours? You then proposed an expedient for ascertaining the persons from whom he was kidnapped. This expedient failed. God, however, would discover him, and had foreordained the means. He set upon him an indubitable mark for the purpose; none knew of this but his nurse, and she has revealed it. Had any one of these many circumstances been wanting, our child must have continued a stranger to us for ever. Indeed, Sir, said Mr. Fenton, they are all concurring proofs, that you are under the especial eye of providence. But Sir, I fear we shall have a heavy loss of our friend Ned: for though he does not want his small faults, he is a worthy hearted child, and a very pleasant companion. O Sir, cried Mr. Fielding, you and master Fenton have a right to command both him and us at all times. But come, Ned, take leave, for the present, of your best friends.

Here Ned, with filling eyes, stepped respectfully to Mr. Fenton, and kneeling before him, took each of his hands and kissed them, crying, My father! my father! whereupon Mr. Fenton tenderly raised him, and pressing him affectionately to his bosom, cried, God be good to you, my son, and make you a blessing to your true parents, and to all your kin!

Ned then turned to Harry, and taking him by both hands, and looking him fondly in the face. O master Harry, master Harry, he cried; I never shall be able to say the word farewell to you, my master Harry! I was hungry and you fed me, I was naked and you clothed me, I was a stranger and you took me in; the whole world to me was fatherless and friendless, when you were father and mother, and a whole world of friends to me, my true lord and master Harry! Are you not my
owner?

owner? am I not your property, your own hard bought bargain? Did you not purchase me with your stripes, and with your precious blood, and will you suffer me to be taken away from you, my heart's master?

Here Harry swallowing his passion as well as he was able, clasped Ned in his arms and cried, My brother, my brother, my friend and brother for ever! then turning to Mr. and Mrs. Fielding, and wiping his eyes, I hope, madam, I hope, Sir, says he, that you will excuse my young friend here, for his partiality to a family who have loved him long and very dearly; in a little time, to be sure, he will love and respect you both, above all the world, though put altogether. Though I grieve to part with him, I heartily rejoice at his being found, and acknowledged to be the child of such worthy parents; and I hope, I say, that you will not be offended at his concern for parting with his old friends.

No, my noble creature, cried Mr. Fielding, we are delighted at the proof that he gives of his gratitude, and at the strength of his attachment, where he has been so highly obliged.

O, Sir! O madam, says Ned, (kissing the hands of his parents) did you but know the value of what I lose, when I leave, when I leave—and here he burst afresh into tears.

Mrs. Fielding then took Ned in her arms, and tenderly embracing him, cried, We do, my love, we do know the value of the family that you leave; and it is the first and the dearest wish of my heart, that we should all become as one family and as one household. This angel here, as you say, is your rightful owner; and we owe him more, on that account, than our whole fortune can pay, and he shall have you as long and as often as ever he pleases; but, for this night, my darling, it would be very unkind not to go with your good nurse, your true and loving mammy, who has suffered so
much

much for your sake ; and her case requires that we should take her immediately to the doctor's.

Here Ned acquiesced ; and having taken a weeping leave of all the family, not forgetting the meanest servant in the house, he stepped slowly into the coach, sat down by his nurse, and away they drove.

As soon as the family of the Fieldings were gone, Harry withdrew to his chamber and locked himself in, while Mr. Fenton went to enfranchise his late prisoner.

He first returned the certificate to her, and then presenting her with twenty guineas, he bowed and made a motion with his hand to the door, intimating that she was at liberty to depart when she thought proper.

Having looked several times, with silence and surprise, now at Mr. Fenton, and again at the money, I should be very ill deserving of your bounty, Sir, she said, should I attempt any longer to impose upon you. I am not deaf as you supposed ; it was only an artifice which I made use of, when taken into custody, to avoid answering questions that might have brought a worthy family into disgrace. But you look so altogether the gentleman and the kind-hearted Christian, that I think I ought to have no reserve of any kind toward you.

Be pleased then, said Mr. Fenton, as far as prudence will allow, to let me know who and what you are.

I hope, Sir, she replied, that I am very far from being what I was, otherwise I should be the very vilest of the vile. Wherefore, if you will allow a weakly woman to fit, I will tell you the whole of my short story, with the same openness that I made confession of my sins to him, from whom alone I can look for remission.

My maiden name was Fielding ; my father was a gentleman of large fortune and good repute ; he had by my mother a very worthy son who inherits his estate, and a very unworthy daughter who now takes the shame of confessing her faults before you.

My mother was one of the holiest of women, and brought me up, to the best of her power, in her own principles and practice ; but she died when I was in the thirteenth year, an age when the blood is in the tide of flow, before I had acquired a due relish of my duty, before the yoke of Christ became easy, or his burden delightful.

My father then provided me a governess, a woman well skilled in French and needle-work, and other such shewy matters of accomplishment ; a woman also of much apparent modesty and decorum, though inwardly of a debauched and lascivious disposition.

There is nothing so pernicious to the breeding and morals of children, as their being permitted to keep kitchen company, where high-fed husseys and pampered fellows form a hot-bed of steaming sensuality and guilt.

My governess, though something elderly, took a liking to my father's clerk, a modest young man, whom, however, she had the art to seduce to her wanton purposes.

In order to promote her intrigues, in my father's absence, at evenings, she used to procure collations, and after we had eat and drank, to propose plays and other matters of innocent merriment, as she called them.

The chief of our men servants was one Guiliam Rampant, the butler, a comely robust fellow, and one in whom my father had placed great trust.

One night, as we were playing at Hide and Seek, this man watched the place where I sought to conceal

ceal myself, and coming softly and suddenly to me, he caught me up under one arm, and running with me to a distant apartment, he there ruined me.

A false shame did not permit me to say any thing of the matter; and the villain had, afterwards, the insolence to threaten me, that, if I did not admit him to further familiarities, he would tell what had passed, and expose me to the family.

At length, both the governess and I proved with child, of which the house-keeper, in private, informed my father; whereupon my governess was turned with infamy out of doors, and I was locked up and confined in a waste room.

On the third day of my imprisonment my father entered, and having examined me with a stern though sedate severity, on my knees, and with a flood of tears, I confessed the whole affair.

The butler was then sent for. Guillian, said my father, if you do not directly marry this strumpet, I will hang you for a rape; but if you marry her, I will give you two hundred pounds to set you going in some poor way, on condition that I never see the face of either of you any more.

The last terms were immediately complied with. A license was sent for. We were married in my father's presence. The money was paid down, and we were directly turned into the streets.

Upon this small fund, and about a hundred and fifty pounds more which my husband had saved of his vails and wages, he set up a gaming tavern, to which there was great resort, and as he was a very bold, sensible, and enterprising man, he became extremely agreeable to numbers of his customers, among whom there were many persons of fortune and distinction.

At length the time of my labour approached. I lay, for a fortnight, in agonies that admitted of
little

little intermission. My child died within me, and was brought into the world piecemeal.

I languished for three months after my delivery, without being able to quit my bed; and the remembrance of the pangs and miseries that I endured caused me to vow within myself, that I would never more have any commerce with mankind.

On my recovery, therefore, I daily rejected the caresses of my husband, and every night, I bolted myself into my chamber; whereupon he began to behave himself with great coldness and distance toward me, and to frequent the company of common and lewd women.

In about fourteen months after my marriage, my husband had a run of dice against him, whereby he lost to the amount of fifteen hundred pounds; and as he had not wherewithal to discharge the full sum, he determined, at all events, to pay to the last penny of his debts of honour, as he called them. Hereupon he began to raise contributions on the public, and after several very bold and successful exploits, his person became notorious, and he was taken, from amidst his right honourable associates, at a gaming-table in London, conveyed to Newgate, tried, convicted, and executed at Tyburn.

Upon this, all our substance was immediately seized by creditors, or by the officers of the sheriff; and I was turned into an unknown world, without any thing to sustain me, save a few shillings in my pocket, and the single suit of cloaths which I happened to have on my back.

I forgot to tell you, my dear Sir, that my worthy, but afflicted father had died before this period; and this ought to have been the greatest of afflictions to myself: but the season of my feelings was not yet come: and I barely dropt a slight tear, without any sense of remorse for having been, in all likelihood, his principal executioner.

As

As my brother was now the only person, upon earth, to whom I had any right to apply for support; I accordingly went to his house with an anxious beating heart, and sent him in a written state of my very deplorable case. But his answer was, that if ever I should again appear before his doors, he would take me up as a vagabond, and transport me to the plantations.

Wholly desperate by this disappointment, and stimulated almost to frenzy, my blood boiled in my veins. The horrid thoughts of vengeance could alone assuage my raging spirit; and I resolved to compass my ends by poison, by dagger, or any the speediest means. For I looked upon my brother as a robber, who had spoiled me of my title to my father's affection and inheritance.

For this accursed purpose it was necessary to get near him. I sold my cloaths, and having disguised myself in the dress of a chare-woman, I engaged as a servant in a cellar over the way.

From this place I observed an infant of about two years old, who, at times, was brought to the door by the hand of his nurse; and I learned that he was the only child of my brother, and that the lives of his parents were wrapt up in him.

Here I conceived I had found an object on whom I might execute my revenge, with better safety to my own person, and greater torture to my adversary, than by any other method that invention could supply. I therefore couched on my watch, like a lioness for her prey, and spying the child alone, I shot across the street, caught him up in my arms; and away I flew.

I hastened with him as fast as I could till I reached the fields. I then got under a ditch, and stripped him of his gay raiment which I folded in a handkerchief; and having cut in pieces an old petticoat, and tacked it about him, I made my way to
a cabin

a cabin where they sold small ale and spirits, and there took up my lodgings for the first night.

I believe, Sir, I am the greatest instance that ever was, of the length to which human nature can go in reprobacy, when abandoned by God, and unvisited by his gracious motions in the heart. The strong bent which my mother had given me to religion, caused me only to recoil with the greater force; and when my father cast me off, I even reproached my God, and was at enmity with him for having suffered me to fall into my first offence against virtue.

I was yet urged and carried further down the hill of perdition, by the example of the licentious set of profligates that daily and nightly frequented my husband's house; insomuch that, in time, I began to relish their profaneness, and my tongue, as well as my ear, at length, became accustomed to oaths and execrations; a vice, of all others, the most unnatural, most shocking, and abhorred in our sex.

In fine, I became an alien and even an enemy to all goodness; and I would willingly have been a party in any kind of wickedness, save that of personal prostitution; and this I avoided merely for fear of a second childbirth, which I dreaded more than I dreaded the torments of hell.

How pitiable, then, must have been the case of the unhappy infant who had fallen into my cruel gripe. I often suffered him, on purpose, to weep for hunger, and then would lash him for crying, that I might please myself, as it were, with the miseries of my brother in the person of his child.

For four years and nine months I led a wandering and mendicant life, in which trade my little nephew grew very successful and useful to me, so that I began to abate of my severity toward him. Detested by my relations, and outcast from the world,

world, I cared for nothing but self; and nightly indulged my appetite with the best victuals and liquor that my pocket could afford, from the issues of my own petitions and of those of my fellow-traveller.

One day, having passed through Enfield, where I had raised some petty contributions, I spied an infant on a bank, at a distance from any house, and instantly the project occurred of exacting the larger charities by his means. I looked about, and thinking that I was not observed, I caught the child up, and ran off with all my speed. But I had not gone far, when I heard a man shouting after me, and perceived that I was pursued. Thereupon I cast down the child, with my pouch of provisions; and leaving little Ned behind me also, I made the best of my way through the opposite thicket.

As my terrors continued, I continued to run, till I was all in a glow and faint with fatigue; but still keeping forward, though slower and slower, God conducted me within sight of the parsonage house of Mr. Catharines, which I reached with much difficulty, and then sunk away on the threshold.

I knew nothing further of what passed till I found myself in a warm though coarse bed, with one woman holding a bottle of salts to my nose, and another presenting me with a cordial. I looked about and found myself something revived; but, on the sight of some meat which was brought to me, I again fainted.

Within some hours after, I was seized with pains in all my bones, and fell into a raging though intermitting fever. Mr. Catharines, who was physician to the bodies as well as souls of all his flock, visited and prescribed for me, and had me attended with great humanity.

On

On the third night, I dreamed that an invisible hand came, and seizing me by a single hair of my head, hurried me aloft, through the regions of the air, till it held me right over a fiery gulf, in the pinnacles of whose flames a variety of dæmons appeared to hover, the horridness of whose figures was indescribable to ears of flesh and blood. They all seemed to struggle toward me, and to stretch forth their fangs to receive me; while my husband, Guiliam Rampant, ascended swiftly in the midst, and rushing up with a pair of sheers, cut the hair that withheld me in twain; so down I thought I fell, and giving a great shriek, I awakened to darkness and inexpressible horrors.

Though no light was in the room, my conscious spirit supplied the office. All my transgressions arose minutely and distinctly to memory. They appeared substantially, as so many fiends, within me and round about me; and I fell into an agony that threw me into a fit.

I awoke again before morning, but without any abatement of my terrors or desperation. The former objects continued to present themselves before me; and no longer able to support existence, I groped about for a knife, or other instrument of self-destruction; for I said to myself, perhaps death may bring rest to the weary and overladen, or, at least, afford some respite before the fearful judgment of final condemnation. So, finding no other means that suited my desperate purpose, I grasped my neck in my hands, and exerted my force to strangle myself; but nature proved repugnant to the completion of an office against herself, and I sunk from my agonies into a second fit.

On the breaking of the day Mr. Catharines entered; but, as the room was darkened, I did not know who he was. He approached my bed, and taking hold of my hand, he sighed and said, you are
very

very ill, poor woman, exceeding ill; indeed! you have more need of a physician for your soul, than your body; if you please then I will kneel down and pray with you and for you, that God may receive your departing spirit.

O no, Sir, I cried, I cannot pray; even to hear a prayer would be worse than hell to me. I have no God, no Saviour, they have long since departed from me; I am a sinner to whom hope can never come; Omnipotence itself can do nothing for me; I feel that, if God would, he cannot save me, except he were to create me over again.

And he can create you over again, cried the good Mr. Catharines; even in this instant he can make you a new nature and a new creature; he can save you from all your sins by an inward salvation, by pouring the abundance of himself into your bosom.

O Sir, I exclaimed, you do not know how vile I am. Even now I am in hell; the fiends have the property and possession of me. O, if any single soul were to suffer, for everlasting, what I suffered last night, better it were that creation had never been.

Here I recounted to him my dream, with the agonies that I felt, and my attempt to destroy myself; when the comforting saint cried out, Good hopes, good hopes! very excellent hopes, indeed! These are strong and blessed compunctions. I see that the saviour of sinners is determined not to lose you. Be of good cheer! here, take this julep to recruit your wearied spirits, that you may be able to lay open the woundings of your soul to the ministering physician of your dear and loving Lord.

But, do you think, Sir, said I, that there is any hope for me! Hope, cried he! there is assurance, more stable than the marble foundations of the earth! God is all love; he is nothing but love; he never rejected any that once turned unto him. His incarnation,

carnation, his whole task and business upon earth, his sufferings and crucifixion, his agonies and death, were chosen and embraced by him, for the love and sake of sinners. It is in the regions of sinning Nephthali, in the darkness and shadow of death, that the light of the loving Jesus delights to spring up. But come, my dear sister, tell me who and what you are? Lay open, with truth and honesty, the manifold distempers of your sin-sick soul; your weakness, your poverty, your nakedness, your pollutions, your errors, and your emptiness; and he, who shineth in darkness, will descend into you, my sister, and will be your strength, and the riches of pardoning mercy to you; and will cover your nakedness, and purify your pollutions, and turn your errors into rectitude, and your emptiness into the fullness of the joy and glory of your God.

Here I made him a full recital of all the passages of my life, as openly, but much more minutely, than I have done to your honour. Never was man so affected, he groaned, he sobbed aloud, he wet his handkerchief with his tears, as though it had been drenched in the river.

As soon as I had concluded. Do you not know me then? he cried, (breaking afresh into tears) do you not know me, Mrs. Phæbe? Know you not Marmaduke Catharines, your brother's tutor and your tutor, the man from whose lips you used to imbibe instructions with so much avidity? Ah, had I stayed, nothing of this would have happened; but your brother got me presented to a rich living here, and so I left my vineyard and the fruits thereof unguarded! O that cursed Rampant! I left my lamb to the voracious and remorseless wolf!—From your infancy, Mrs. Phæbe, you were the darling of my affections; the day did not seem to shine in which I saw you not. Your smiles cheered my spirit, and your unaffected graces played round my heart.

Your

Your brother, too, saw and approved my passion for you. What happiness did he not promise to himself in our union ! We will be brothers, he cried, my Catharines, folding me fast in his arms ; we will be brothers in reality, as well as inclination !

But those blissful projects soon vanished away. You were seduced, my daughter, you were seduced from your duty, from your God and your lover. Your brother writ me an account of your fatal falling away ; and I spent my nights in tears, and my days in anguish.

Ah, how you are altered even in person and aspect ! I could not have known you again. Sin hath taken away the innocence and sweetness of your countenance, and spread a cloudiness and stain in the place thereof. But you are returned, my child, you are returned to virtue and piety, to yourself and to your God ! and he will once more beautify you, and make you, as the King's daughter, all glorious within, and deck you with living sapphires, even the morning stars of the preparation of the appearance of JESUS !

While the holy man spoke, the nether millstone of my heart began to dissolve ; my agonies and terrors departed from me ; my breast began to heave with a kindly though sad emotion ; and a torrent of tears greatly eased my distemper, both of body and mind.

Mr. Catharines, as I afterwards learned, on hearing of my doleful miscarriage, had vowed to himself, in secret, never to have commerce with womankind.

A widowed lady, however, of large fortune and liberal education, but much advanced in years, happened to reside in the neighbourhood. She was first caught by the simple though affecting piety of his discourses from the pulpit. She visited, and was visited by him. She was then further charmed by
the

the lustre of his sentiments, the sanctitude of his manners, and the sweetness of his disposition. Sir, said she to him one day; I am, by birth, a foreigner, and neither have children, nor any relation of my blood, in this kingdom, who, on my decease, may put in for a title to my fortune. I blush not to tell you, that, if I were young and beautiful, you are the man of the world whom I would have chosen for my husband. But my defects take nothing from your great merits. You are as precious in my eyes, as if I were deserving of you; and I am desirous of making you my own for life, provided you swear to me, before the nuptial knot is tied, that my fortune, my company, and my obedience, are all that ever you will require from me in right of our marriage. You shall live and shall be as an only son to me; and I will have for you, at once, all the duty of a wife, and the tenderness of a mother.

I am not insensible of what gibbers may say, respecting the impropriety of certain appetites at my years; but I trust, by my conduct, to disabuse their opinion, and to cause all occasion of stumbling, in my neighbour, to cease.

In the mean time, my two capital prospects will be compassed by this scheme; the one of giving myself a legal title to your company; the other of giving you a legal title to my fortune.

A proposal, for such a species of marriage, answered exactly to Mr. Catharines vow of celibacy. The lady, though considerably upward of sixty, shone in all the graces and attractions of youth, excepting only those personal allurements to concupiscence, toward which Mr. Catharines had resolved on an aversion; he could therefore form no rational objection to the scheme; and, within a few weeks, they were privately married.

While I wept, as I told you, Sir, under a kindly remorse for my manifold offences, Mr. Catharines kneeled down and poured forth his prayers beside me, with an elocution so warm, and so deeply

ly

ly affecting, as entered and searched through my heart and my reins, and seemed to tear out, by the roots, all the evil that was in me.

As soon as he had ended, and that I had thanked him, with words half suffocated, for the graciousness of his consolations, Mrs. Catharines came in. Would you then, Sir, said she, would you monopolize all the charities? will you not suffer a sister near the throne of Grace, who may assist in the under-services to the servants of our master?

My dear, said he tenderly, I was about to request your presence. Here lies on the bed of sickness, and perhaps of death, the daughter of my patron, the sister of my friend, and once the dearest object of my affections and prospects for life. Pray order a chamber for her more becoming her station, and my debts to her family.

She instantly went out with alacrity, and without reply; and, within a few minutes, several female servants entered, who, gently wrapping me in the clothes wherein I lay, conveyed me to a bed ready sheeted and warmed, that stood in a small but decent apartment.

As soon as I was placed, Mrs. Catharines came up, and stooping, tenderly kissed me, and said, God be very gracious unto you, my daughter!

Here I was treated with an attention and delicacy, that joined with my evil deeds to put me to utter shame. However, I began to recover apace, and within a few days was able to sit up.

On the seventh night, I had a very singular dream or vision, which will never depart my memory; and which, I trust, through life and death, will preserve its happy and comforting influence upon me.

Methought I walked, with vast crowds of fine and merry people, along a road of a gentle and pleasant descent, made easy to the foot like the mall in London.

On

On a sudden, my husband Gulliam Rampant stood beside me. I surveyed him with a delight that I had never known before. He seemed to surpass in beauty all the persons around us; his garments were embellished with gold and gems, and his countenance shone with a wonderful lustre.

Come, Miss Phæbe, said he, gracefully taking me by the hand, come with me to yonder paradise, where I will weave a garland for you of never-fading flowers, and lead you to fruits of a heavenly flavour. Immediately, a vast garden opened its blooms and incomparable beauties to my quickened imagination. The odours thereof perfumed the air, far and wide, and the burdened trees reached forth fruits of irresistible temptation.

My husband then plucked, and gave me to eat of the clusters of the grape and apples of the pine, which I seized and devoured with an intemperate relish; when happening to look down, I perceived that he had got the legs and hoofs of a Goat, and it instantly occurred that he could be no other than the tempter of our first parents. Terrified almost to death, I did not dare to speak out; but, lifting up my heart in a secret prayer, he and his paradise immediately vanished.

At once I found myself in a vast and dreary wilderness, whose trees were barren of fruits, and the brambles of berries; through which there was no path, and from whence there was no outlet. Go to what side I would, I had scarce made my way through one thicket when I was presented with another; till being spent with fatigue, I despaired of any deliverance, and sat me down to die.

Soon after, methought Mr. Catharines approached, in mean and beggared apparel, but with a majestic and stern countenance. Wretch! he cried, are you at length come to a knowledge of the evil of your ways? are you now come to a sense of your vile and forlorn estate? do you find at last that I,
alone,

alone, can be your stay and your helper? So saying, he seized me by the hand, and his touch filled my frame with confidence and delight. We rose into the air, we moved together over a boundless track of desert, from whence the lions roared and the wolves bayed at us. At length we alighted at the entrance of a narrow path, that led up the ascent of a mountainous country. The nearer side was covered with clouds, and blasted by tempest, through which the farther part seemed to gleam with a faint radiance that promised the rising day.

Courage! said my conductor, we must ascend this mountain, in spite of all opposition; in spite of all the toils, the difficulties, and dangers; the pains, calamities, distresses, and discouragements of the way. No obstacles, I cried, shall appal or discourage me; I will rejoice in distresses and pains, while I have you by my side.

Hereupon I felt wonderful strength and alacrity; I ran up the ascent with a willing and eager pace, and proposed in a few minutes to reach the top. But, alas! I was widely out in my account. The way became straiter, and steeper, and rougher. I began to fail through fatigue, and the edged flints tore my feet, and marked my footsteps with blood. Ah! Sir, I cried, this is very grievous indeed. Peace, said he, it is very salutary; these flints are your kindest friends, your truest physicians; and the wounds that they give your body will be more than the balm of Gilead to the healing of your soul. I then summoned all my powers, and proceeded, though with much anguish, which often compelled me to lean, with all my weight, upon my companion.

At length we came to a pass that was thick set, and interwoven with briars and thorns, and seeing no way, I made a full stop. Good cheer, cried my guide! this must also be traversed; there is no quailing now, you must endure to the end, my daughter.

daughter. The thorn was pronounced a curse to the first Adam and his posterity, but your second Adam has made it a wreath of living brightness : these accordingly, are appointed to twist the garland of your blessedness, and to make you a partaker of their crown of eternal glory.

Revived by this promise, I rushed into the midst, and struggled to get forward, though screaming with anguish : but when the thorns rent my skin, and entered into my body and soul, and lodged their stings within me; I could endure no longer ; but casting myself on my conductor, O that death, that death, I cried ! would put an end to my sufferings ! He then turned and smiled upon me, and taking me under his arm, bore me harmless through the remainder ; then, seating me on a bank, he placed himself beside me.

While I sat, still panting with pain and fatigue, he bent forward, and pulled off his sandals, I then saw the large wounds that the spike had made. My spirit instantly told me, that it was my Lord himself, under the form of his minister. I threw myself prostrate before him. My bosom opened wide ; and taking hold of his feet, covered with dust as they were, I pressed them to my heart, and would have thrust them into my soul ; when, on their touch, I felt such an ecstatic transport, that if I had not awoke, my body could no longer have retained my spirit, it must instantly have issued to him who breathed it.

The consolation of this dream greatly strengthened and restored me, and I hastened to get up, that I might delight myself with serving the servants of my benefactors.

When Mrs. Catharines rose, she found me busied in the basest employments of the kitchen. She looked astonished. Why, my dear, she cried, would you demean yourself in this manner ? O, madam, I replied, I beseech you to leave me to my own

own conscience; it tells me that even this office is much too honourable for me.

When breakfast was ready, Mr. Catharines came in from his morning's walk of meditation. As he entered, I cast myself before him, and clasping his knees, cried, How blessed are the feet of him who bringeth good tidings of salvation to sinners! but above all, blessed is he who beareth in his own person the image and impress of the prince of peace! Being much surprised and abashed at my manner of salutation, he demanded the reason of it, and I told my dream; whereupon they were so affected, that they both shed tears of tender congratulation.

I have already told you, Sir, that Mr. Catharines was physician to the bodies as well as souls of all his parishioners; I might have added, to all the country about him.

For this purpose, he provided a little kind of apothecary's shop, where he kept all manner of drugs for the sick, as well as matters of surgery for the sore and the wounded. On these occasions I became his principal deputy and assistant. I was, myself, often astonished at the effects of my application in this way. I scarce remember an instance wherein I failed of success. A spirit of healing seemed to accompany my walks. I have frequently cured those who were given up as irrecoverable by the doctors and surgeons. And I never had such heart-felt delight as when, on my knees, I bathed the feet of the sick, or washed the ulcers of the beggar; for in them, methought, the great Physician of sin-sick souls lay before me, who had healed my own woundings, and done away my transgressions.

I should have told you, Sir, that when Mr. Catharines heard that I had stolen and dropped my little nephew, the only child of his best and most beloved friend, he, that very day, dispatched a number of emissaries to Enfield, and throughout all the adjacent

country, with orders to make the most diligent search and inquiry after him ; but, alas ! all our pains and solitudes, both then and afterward, proved fruitless. This cost me day and night secret deluges of tears, and served to embitter the happiest life that otherwise, perhaps, could be spent upon earth.

About three months ago, Mrs. Catharines began to decline, and peaceably dropped, like over ripe fruit, into the lap of our general mother.

Mr. Catharines had often desired my permission to write to my brother in my favour ; but conscious of the injury that I had done him in the person of his child, I had hitherto declined the proposal. At length, however, I determined to throw myself at his feet, and confess my guilt, though without any prospect of obtaining his pardon ; perhaps, said I, he may think on some more successful means for the discovery of his son, than we have yet hit upon. My benefactor approved of my resolution ; he wrote a letter to my brother by me ; and within a few days, I set out in his chaise for London.

On the road, I took it into my head once more to make trial of my brother's nature, and to present myself before him as an object of his charity. For this purpose I dismissed the chaise at St. Alban's. I also sent back my little baggage with an account of my project in a note to Mr. Catharines, and retained nothing but this poor garb that I have on.

On that night I was taken suddenly and extremely ill of a colic, and could keep nothing in my stomach for the six following days. I sent to London for a physician, who attended and prescribed for me ; and by the time I was able to creep abroad, what with fees to the doctor, the apothecary's bill, and a still more exorbitant bill from the landlord, I had scarce three sixpences left to bear my charges to the city. With that sum, however, I set forward on foot ; but finding myself still very weak and sickly, I was
tempted

tempted to repine for not having brought more money from home; but again, I remembered that my master had told me, that sufferings were the best friends and physicians to such a sinner. I was, therefore, content and pleased to be once more reduced to the lowest state of beggary; and after three days sore travel, God was pleased to conduct me to your charitable door.

This, Sir, is the letter which my friend wrote in my favour to my brother. You see it is open; but before you read it, I ought to account to you, for some touches of uncommon tenderness, which Mr. Catharines has expressed towards me.

Some weeks after the funeral of his lady, he and I stood chatting in the front of the house. The evening was exceeding pleasant, and the maids sat singing and milking the cows before us; when the great bull, suddenly tearing up the ground with his feet, ran furiously at his master. On seeing him approach, I shrieked and rushed into the house; but observing that Mr. Catharines did not follow, I turned and ran as precipitately out again. There I saw that the terrible creature had pinned him up, between his horns, against the wall, at which he butted with all his force.

Then casting fear aside, I sprung up, and seizing the bull by one of his horns, would have torn him away from my dear protector. But my strength not availing, I caught his ear in my mouth, and bit it through and through, while I endeavoured to tear out his eyes with my nails. In the mean time, a little favourite mastiff, scarce bigger than two fists, came happily out, and leaping up, caught the monstrous animal by the nose, whereupon he gave a hideous roar, and flinging away, ran kicking and leaping about the yard.

I remembered nothing more till I awoke from a swoon, and perceived that Mr. Catharines sat beside me. He held one of my hands, which he had wash-

ed with his tears, and which, at times, he pressed to his lips, and again to his bosom.

When he had prevailed upon me to swallow a spoonful of cordial, O my Phæbe, my Phæbe, he cried, you have this day offered up your precious life a victim for the preservation of mine; and from this day forward, my life, and all that I am, is your property for ever. But tell me, my Phæbe, whence could you get, in a moment, such astonishing intrepidity? how attain to the power of acting against nature, the constitutional terrors and delicacies of your sex? Ah, Sir, I replied, the book of life tells us, that "perfect love casteth fear away."

From that time Mr. Catharines earnestly pressed me to marriage. My first, and my last, and my only love, he would say; you know that in woman-kind I can love nothing but you. Your whole image, your every feature is impressed upon my soul; I am already wedded to them, they are inseparable from my being. Why then do you wish to have me cast forth from my species, as a withered branch, without any kind of fruit, without one, the least little one, to bind us up together, and carry us down to posterity? O, Sir, I would then say, let not our nuptials be sullied by any gloom or regret; let me first be reconciled, if possible, to my brother, and then dispose of me as you please; it is your right so to do.

I thank you, madam, said Mr. Fenton, I thank you for your very affecting, and still more edifying narrative; and I will endeavour to recompence you for the trouble that I have given you, by being the bearer of very happy tidings. Your little nephew has lived with me almost ever since you lost him. He has received an education becoming his family, and was this day discovered and restored to his parents.

My God, my Christ, she exclaimed, what a wonder is here! How are blind and erring mortals, wilfully

wilfully blind and wilfully erring, deserving of such a clue as this to guide them? My nephew alive and well, discovered and restored this very day to his true parents!—I am confounded, I am crushed to the centre beneath the weight of thy benefits, O thou overflowing Fountain of Mercy and grace!

Now, madam, said Mr. Fenton, now it is at your election to reveal or suppress the affair respecting your nephew. I know, Sir, she replied, you proposed this only to try me; I desire no advantage from fraud or disguise, and could I be so base, this letter, as you will find, would detect and betray me,

Mr. Fenton then unfolded the letter, and read as follows :

TO EDWARD FIELDING, Esq;

Friend and brother of my soul,

“ I have often reproved, and always detested,
 “ that cruel and impious custom of casting off our
 “ friends, or kindred, on account of their errors
 “ or frailty, or even of their fall from honour.
 “ This custom is more especially condemnable and
 “ pernicious, when it affects the more tender and
 “ more pitiable sex: the indiscretion of their nearest friends begins the alarm; the world follows,
 “ and increases the cry; the wretches, like marked
 “ deer, are driven forth to the hounds, and must
 “ speedily become a prey to famine and death, or for
 “ ever be precluded from any return to virtue.

“ Had you, my dear brother, had you given that
 “ charity to your only sister which you slightly
 “ throw to a common beggar, you might have saved her soul alive, and have continued a happy parent of a promising son at this day. She repented
 “ your treatment, she rent your child from you;
 “ you

“ you merited the motive, but I am grieved at the
“ consequence.

“ As God has been pleased wonderfully to restore
“ your sister to virtue, she would rejoice to restore
“ your son to you ; but it is not in her power ;
“ he strayed from her within some miles of this
“ place : we have used all possible means to recover
“ him, but in vain ; and his loss hath cost her seas
“ of tears, and years of anguish.

“ Receive her, then, as a precious pearl from
“ the bottom of the deep, as a casket of gold and
“ jewels recovered from shipwreck. She was dead,
“ but is alive again ; she was lost, but is found.
“ Receive her then, I say, as an angel of God,
“ sent on purpose to effect your own salvation.

“ I know not how it comes to pass, that great
“ sinners often become the greatest of saints ; and
“ in a year, a month, a day, exceed in growth and
“ stature a long life of leisurely righteousness.
“ Their bows, as it should seem, being strongly
“ bent the adverse way, they dart forward with the
“ greater strength and rapidity. It is even so
“ with our precious Phæbe. She is become a gen-
“ tle flame of the divine loves and charities. While
“ she stands upon earth, and bends, in her low-
“ liness, beneath all creatures, the moon of chan-
“ geable things is put under her feet. She treads,
“ as it were, upon the stars of the galaxy ; and I
“ behold, at a distance, and revere the glory of her
“ steps.

“ Receive her then, I say, again, as the dearest
“ boon and blessing that Heaven can bestow. But
“ O, restore her to me ; give her to me, accord-
“ ing to promise, that she may assist to conduct me
“ to that kingdom of little children, whereof she
“ is a blessed inhabitant at this very day.

“ Yours, &c.

M. CATHARINES.”

You

You see, Sir, said Mrs. Phæbe smiling, you see that Mr. Catharines must be a lover, by the extravagance of his praise. I see, madam, said Mr. Fenton, that he deservedly loves; and greatly deserves also to be beloved. But madam, if you will be ruled by my advice, you will stay here till your brother shall call upon me, which I expect he will do in a very little time. Meanwhile I will introduce you to a sister-faint, who has been long tried and refined in the hottest furnace of affliction.

The very next morning Mr. Fielding rode to the door, attended only by a single servant. As soon as he had saluted Mr. Fenton, and sat down, he took out a note for 2000*l.* and presented it to him. You must not refuse, Sir, said he, to relieve my distress, by accepting this in part of what I owe you. I can spare it, without the smallest inconvenience. I have lately recovered a track of land that lies contiguous to Mr. Catharines, the worthy man of whom you heard me speak yesterday; so that I shall soon have the pleasure of taking possession of a considerable accession to my fortune, and, at the same time, the greater pleasure of embracing so very dear a friend. This sum, Sir, said Mr. Fenton, comes very seasonably to the relief of a person, for whom I have conceived an extraordinary esteem and affection; a person who is entitled to my best service, and who may also be entitled to your further munificence. So saying, Mr. Fenton rose, went to the door, took Mrs. Phæbe by the hand, and leading her toward her brother, This, Sir, said he, is the gentlewoman of whom I spoke, and whom I recommend to your tenderest regards.

Mr. Fielding looked earnestly and inquisitively at his sister, changed colour, and for a while sat mute with astonishment; when, suddenly rising, and stepping hastily to her, he clasped her in his arms,

arms, and cried aloud, my Phæbe, my dearest Phæbe ! my long lost, long sought, long lamented sister ! have I found you at last ? are my prayers at length heard ? and are you once more restored to my bosom, my sister ? Ah, what must have been your sufferings, what have I not suffered myself, from the stinging recollection of the barbarity of my behaviour ? But at the time that you applied to me, I was exasperated against you, by being told you had turned out a common prostitute ; and, from your connection with that reprobate to whom my father had unhappily married you, I was ready to believe the worst that could be reported concerning you. Pardon me, however, my Phæbe, do but promise me your pardon, and I will endeavour to compensate for my injurious treatment of you.

Here, the sister dropped on her knees, and, breaking into tears and sobs, replied, You want no pardon, my brother, you never wronged me.—I deserved all sorts of evils ; they were due to my transgressions—but I have injured you, I fear past forgiveness, my brother.—It was I who stole your little darling, who robbed you of your only child, and caused you so many years of sorrow and bitterness.—I deserved it, I deserved it at your hands, exclaimed Mr. Fielding ; let us then exchange forgiveness, my Phæbe ; for our child is restored to us, and we remember our sorrows no more. So saying, his eyes filled, and tenderly raising his sister, he took her again to his bosom.

Mr. Fenton, wholly melted by this passionate scene, took them jointly in his arms, and then silently seated them opposite to each other.

My sister, said Mr. Fielding, you have promised me your pardon, before you were acquainted with the extent of my faults. Our dear father, in his last illness, made me sit by his side ; when, heaving a deep sigh, he thus began : I fear, I fear, my son, that I have greatly wronged your sister. I grieve at heart that I had her married to that ruffian Ram-
pant

pant. With a little less of severity, and more of tender admonition, she might have arisen from her fall; she might have returned to virtue and honour; her errors might have been forgotten; perhaps, restored to rectitude; she might have been less wretched, and my days might have been longer. She was young, she was artless, and obvious to seduction. I, myself, joined to betray her, by that she-wolf whom I appointed the guardian of my lamb. Perhaps, as she affirmed, her inclination no way concurred with the force that was offered her. We ought, as far as possible, to have covered her shame: shame only serves to bronze over a bashful countenance, and make it altogether shameless. Alas, my child, all things appear quite different, at my death, from what they did during my life-time; and the pride of blood, and the resentment for injured gentility, give place to the calls of nature and the feelings of humanity.

I intended your sister five thousand pounds; but by my will I have cut her off with a shilling, lest the villain, her husband, should come in for any share of our substance. Wherefore I leave you, in my place, at once the father, the brother, and the guardian of my dear child—and here his bursting tears prevented another word.

As soon as he was more composed, he proceeded. I adjure you, my son, in the name of our common father, in the name of that God to whom I am going, I adjure you, I say, to keep a constant watch over the conduct of your still precious sister, my son! and, if such a one may be found, to keep in fee some discreet and pious matron, who may insinuate into her acquaintance, and gain her confidence, and preserve her from a further progress in the paths of vice; for O, the soul of my wrecked child, at this hour, is infinitely precious in my eyes!

I further

I further enjoin you that, in case the reprobate her husband, should perish by sword or pistol, or by the gallows, as it is most likely, you will pay your sister the sum of three thousand pounds, but gradually at first, as her necessities may crave; and the whole, on your assurance of her return to virtue.

While her brother was speaking, Mrs. Phæbe had thrown her apron over her face, and by her groans and passionate sobs prevented his proceeding. At length she exclaimed, Wretch, parricide that I am! I have cut short the sacred life of him who brought me to the world. You then loved me, my father, you still continue to love me, though I knew it not; and I have murdered the kindest, the tenderest of parents; but I will die to make atonement, I will not survive you, my father.

Mr. Fielding then arose, and stepped affectionately to his sister, and taking her in his arms, and mixing his tears with hers, endeavoured to console her. You did not, my dearest sister, you did not murder him, he cried; you accuse yourself of faults of which you are no way guilty. Our father was aged, and laboured under a complication of disorders that must, shortly, have put a period to all that was mortal in him. Be comforted then, I say be comforted, my sister!

When Mr. Fielding had resumed his seat, and the violence of his sister's passion had subsided, he looked earnestly and tenderly at her. I will, said he, my Phæbe, at some other time, account to you for the motive of my barbarity toward you, and how I was imposed upon by the very person whom I kept in pay to give me intelligence concerning you. But tell me how it comes to pass that, in my life, I never saw you look so charmingly? even during your infant years, you never had such a sweet simplicity, such a heavenly childishness of countenance

countenance as you now have. It is, said Mr. Fenton, because she is the King's daughter, "all glorious within," and the loveliness of her spirit informs and shines through her aspect.—But here is a known character that will fully clear up the matter. And so saying, he presented him with the letter from Mr. Catharines, when, at the sight of the superscription, Mr. Fielding gave an exclamation of surprise: then, unfolding, he read it in deep silence, but by fits, and interruption; frequently putting, and long holding his handkerchief to his eyes.

As soon as he had finished, Yes, yes, my dear Catharines, my brother, he cried, the wish of my heart shall be accomplished for us both! You shall have your Phæbe restored to you, and she shall be restored to you with Benjamin's portion, even a double portion!—But, O my God, how wonderful, how miraculous is all this! to have my only child, and my only sister, at once restored to me by one and the same hand! Teach me, teach me, Mr. Fenton, by some new method of gratitude, to express a part of the sense of what I owe you!

You have already, Sir, cried Mr. Fenton, done and said by much too much upon that head, and have thereby given me great pain instead of gratification. The payment that I get is a treasure hidden from all men, save him to whom it is given. I will not, however, do you the offence to return you your bill; but shall dispose of it in a manner that, I trust, will be nearly as equitable. Meanwhile, my dear friend, I most cordially congratulate you on the signal evidences that have been given of the favour of your God to you, and of his watchful and intending providence over you and yours. I suppose you will soon set out, with your amiable sister here, on your visit to your friend and brother the worthy Mr. Catharines. I shall heartily pray for a blissful issue to the union of the
fainted

fainted pair, and I request you to favour me with a call on your way.

Within an hour after, Mr. Fielding set off for London, on horseback; and Harry accompanied his sister, in Mr. Fenton's post-chaise, upon a short visit to his friend Ned.

As soon as they were departed, Mr. Fenton took paper, and wrote the following letter to Mr. Catharines.

Reverend and dear Sir.

"Allow a stranger, but a very warm lover of yours, to felicitate you with his whole heart on the success of affairs. Our precious Phæbe was received with transport by her brother, and you cannot be more impatient than he is for your union. He generously presented me with the inclosed bill for 2000*l.* merely, because God had appointed me an humble instrument for doing him some little matter of service. Though I determined not to accept any part thereof, yet I dreaded to grieve him by an avowed refusal. I therefore restore it to you and your Phæbe, as a matter of equity next to that of returning it to himself. It is surely full as proper that your family should take charge of that wherewith providence had been pleased to intrust them, as that I should be incumbered with the disposal thereof. And indeed, my dear Sir, I am already burdened with more trusts of this nature than, I fear, I shall be able to account for.

"That your heart may always continue where your true treasure is already laid up, is the wish of, dear Sir," &c.

When he had folded and sealed his letter, he took bills from his pocket-book, to the amount of
1300*l.*

1300l. and on Harry's return from London, presented them to him. Here, my dear, said he, here is what will enable you to be more than just to your engagements, it will enable you to be generous also. And I desire, my Harry, in matters of charity, that you may never stint the sweet emotions of your heart; for we have enough, my child, and we are but the stewards of the bounty of our God.

Here Harry's speech was stopped, but his silence was more eloquent than a thousand harangues. He suddenly threw his arms about his dear dada, and hiding his face in his bosom, he there vented the tears of that pleasure, love, and gratitude, with which he found himself affected.

On the afternoon of the following day, Harry and Arabella went to drink tea with the widow Neighbourly, who received them with a countenance that spoke an uncommon welcome. Some other company had arrived before them, and rose on their entrance. When all were again seated, Mrs. Neighbourly very affectionately questioned Harry concerning his dada.

On hearing the name of master Fenton, an elderly gentlewoman started. Pray madam, said she eagerly, is this master Fenton, the son of that noble gentleman who lives on the hill? He is, madam, said Mrs. Neighbourly. My God! exclaimed the stranger, can this suckling be the father of the orphan and the widow? Is this he who goes about turning sorrow into joy? who wipes the tears from the afflicted, and heals the broken of heart? Permit me then, thou beloved child of the Father which is in heaven, permit me to approach and throw myself at the feet of my preserver!

So saying, she rose with a rapturous motion, and dropping at Harry's knees, she clasped his legs and kissed his feet, before he could prevent her.

Poor

Poor Harry, much to be pitied, sat astonished, abashed, and distressed to the last degree. At length, recollecting, and disengaging himself with difficulty, My dear madam, he cried, you hurt me greatly; what have I done that you should put me to so much pain?

Babe of my heart, she cried, I am the wife of your Vindex, your own Vindex, whom you redeemed from beggary and slavery; whom you restored to his wretched partner, whom you restored to his infant-daughter; all pining and perishing apart from each other, but now united by you, my angel, in joy and thanksgiving!

Here, her words were suffocated, and throwing herself back in the chair, she was not ashamed to give way to her tears, and putting her handkerchief to her face, she vented her passion aloud.

Harry then rising, and going tenderly to her, put his arms about her, and kissed her forehead, and then her lips. You owe me nothing, my dear Mrs. Vindex, said he, I am still greatly in your debt: I was the very naughty boy who brought your misfortunes upon you. But I am willing to make you amends, and that will do me a great pleasure, instead of the punishment which I deserve.

The tea-table was now laid, and Mrs. Vindex grew more composed; when her husband entered, leading his daughter by the hand, a very pretty little girl of about six years old. Harry instantly sprung up, and running, and throwing himself with a great leap upon him, he hung about his neck, crying, How glad I am to see you, my dear Mr. Vindex! Boy of boys, cried Vindex, am I so blessed as to have you once more in my arms!

The company then rose and saluted Mr. Vindex, and congratulated him on his return to his ancient habitation. But Harry took him aside, and having cautioned him in a whisper, not to take any notice of what should pass, he stole a bill for 160l. into

into his hand, saying softly, it is good first to be honest, so there is what I owe you. And here also is a small matter for your daughter; I did not know, till now, that we had such a sweet little charge in our family. So saying, he slipped to him another bill of 50l. and then, turning from him, stepped carelessly to his seat, as though nothing had happened.

Mean time the astonished Vindex was greatly oppressed. He did not dare to offend Harry by any open intimation of his recent bounty, and yet he could feel no ease till the secret should be disclosed. He therefore stole softly to the back of our hero's chair, where, unperceived of Harry, he displayed the bills to the company, beckoning, at the same time, in a way, that forbade them to take any notice; then, raising his hand over his head, and lifting his eyes toward Heaven, he blessed his benefactor, in a silent ardent ejaculation, and taking an empty seat, joined in with the company.

While they were in chat, the little Susanna slipped, unnoticed, from beside her mamma, and veering over toward Harry, she went on one side, and then on the other, and surveyed him all about; then, coming closer, she felt his clothes, and next his hands, in the way, as it were, of claiming acquaintance with him. At length, looking fondly up to his face, she lisped and said, *Me voud kiss oo, if oo voud ask me.* Indeed then, said Harry, *me vill kiss oo, fedder oo will or no.* And so, catch her up on his knee, he pressed her to his bosom, and kissed her over and over again.

You all see, cried Mr. Vindex, it is not one of the elders with whom our Susanna has fallen in love. My sweet babe, cried Mrs. Vindex, her little heart instinctively led her to her best friend, to the one of all living who best deserved her love. Miss Susanna, said Mrs. Clements, puts me in mind of some very delicate lines in Milton, respecting

specting our Virgin Mother. For she also refused to kiss the loveliest man that ever was created, at least till she was asked.

———“ And though divinely brought,
 “ Yet innocence and virgin-modesty,
 “ Her virtue and the conscience of her worth,
 “ That would be woo’d, and not unsought be won,
 “ Not obvious, nor obtrusive, but retir’d,
 “ The more desirable.”

It is happy, said Mrs. Neighbourly, for our weakly and over affectionate sex, that God has been pleased to fix a monitor within us, who struggles against our inclinations, who fights against our affections, and is, with difficulty, won over to acquiesce in our desires. I know not else, what might become of the most of woman-kind.

But then, said Mrs. Vindex are we not rather to be pitied, that, even when our propensities are warrantable, we are prohibited, by custom, from giving any intimation thereof to the object. While the licentious reprobate, man, roves and riots at large, and unreprieved, beyond the pale over which it is treason for us to look.

I do not pity you, ladies, said Mr. Vindex, I do not at all pity you on account of any restraints that custom has laid you under, respecting chastity, or its environs called decorum. The chastity of woman is the only basis upon which the order, honour, and peace of the world can be built: it twists the sacred and endearing cord of society: without it there could be no amity, no brotherhood upon earth. But then, surely, there is much respect and tenderness due to those from whom such advantages are derived. Whereas I have observed, on the contrary, that the most amiable of your sex are generally mated to tyrants; to men who, being

ing born and appointed their protectors, pervert every end of nature and duty, and treat, with injury, contempt, and insult, the gentle saints whom they should have cherished with their most respectful endearments.

The question yet occurs, said Arabella, whether your devils of husbands find us angels, or make us such. Tyrants are like files, they serve to smooth and polish whatever they are applied to. I was once in company with a man who was called the saint-maker; he had married five shrews in succession, and made grizels of every one of them before they died.

But pray, ladies, said Harry, are there no tyrants among the wives? I lately took a walk to Tower-hill, and growing hungry, I turned in to a little shop of groceries where a slender skinny woman, of about four feet high, stood behind the counter. Taking out a sixpence, I threw it on the board, and desired her to give me the value in almonds and raisins. She had scarce weighed my merchandise, when a huge jolly-looking Quaker came up to the hatch-door, but seemed fearful of opening it. The moment the little woman had cast her eye toward him, she exclaimed, in a shrill and exasperated accent, Art thee there, thou rogue, thou hang-dog, thou gallows faced vagabond? when, gathering up the whole dignity and importance of his person, and clapping a hand on each side, he cried with an undaunted air, "I tell thee, Mary, "I fear thee not!" Ah, thou villain, she vociferated, dares thee then appear in my presence? get thee back to thy fellows and huffeys on whom thee spendest my substance! Still, however, he kept his ground, and courageously repeated, "I tell thee, "Mary, I fear thee not!" Not fear me! Sirrah, sirrah, not fear me! says she; we shall see that in a twinkling. So saying, she whipt up the measuring yard, and skudding round the counter, she
flew

flew to the door. But he was already vanished as fast as his fat sides would let him. And, to tell you the truth, ladies, there was something so authoritative and tremendous in the little body's voice and manner, that I was glad to get out and to scamper after him.

The company laughed heartily; and Mr. Vindex added, I forgot the hero's name, a great general he was, and I think a Frenchman. He won every battle abroad; but was sure to be beaten in his turn also, as often as he returned home to his wife.

Well said Hercules and the distaff, cries Harry! But to the point; the bravest man I know is one Peter Patience, a currier, who lives in the suburbs. My tutor and I were walking one day through Islington, when we perceived the likelihood of a scuffle at a distance.

As we approached, we saw one man making up, with great fury, to another, who would have avoided him; and who, retiring backward across the street, parried his blows, and kept him off as well as he could. His enraged adversary would then have closed in upon him; but, grasping his shoulder with a long and very strong arm, he still held his enemy aloof, who nearly spent all his efforts and blows in the air.

Never did I see so living a representation of heaven and hell, as was visible in the faces of those two men. The muscles of the one were frightfully distorted; his eyes shot fire, and his mouth frothed with madness: while the countenance of the other was as a lake in a summer's evening, that shews Heaven in its bosom, and reflects all the beauties of nature around it.

Be quiet, Ben, he said; you know that I would not hurt you; you know that I love you. What a fool the man makes of himself? Are you not sensible that I could demolish you with a single blow?

blow? but I cannot find in my heart to do it. Be quiet, Ben, I say; I see you want to vex me; but I wont be vexed by you, my dear Ben.

While the gentle Peter was thus expostulating with his exasperated friend, Mrs. Patience, as it should seem, had seen all that passed from an upper casement; and flying down stairs, and rushing out at the door, she seized her husband, behind, by the hair of his head, and tore and cuffed away at a terrible rate.

Poor Peter, finding himself thus between two fires, gave a slight trip to his male assailant; who instantly fell with his shoulder against the pavement, and rising with difficulty, limped homeward, muttering curses all the way.

Then Peter, turning meekly to the lady mistress of his house, Gatty, my love, says he, what have I done to provoke you?———O she cried, you mean spirited, hare-hearted, milk-livered poltroon; I'll teach you what it is to suffer every fellow to pommel you!———Sirrah, sirrah, (and still she cuffed) I'll have you tied down at the foot of the market cross, with notice on your breast, for all who pass to p—s upon you.

Then, quite angry to see the man so abused, to whom I had taken such a fancy, I rushed in between man and wife, and seized Mrs. Patience by both her hands; but wrenching one of them from me, she gave me a round cuff on the side of my head. I was, however, too well used to cuffs to matter that much; and so, catching one of her hands in both of mine, I gave her a pluck to me, and a foot at the same time, and laid her on the broad of her back in the kennel.

My friend Peter looked quite astonished at this, and fearing what might happen to me on the rising up of his wife, he tucked me like a gizzard under the wing of a turkey, and off he scoured with me down the street; while Mr. Clement also made pretty

pretty nimbly after us, for fear, as I suppose, that Mrs. Patience, when on her legs, might take him for one of our company.

As soon as we had turned a corner, and were out of harm's way, honest Peter set me down. My friend, says I, if you would be advised by me, you will not be in a mighty hurry to get back to your wife: I see a house of entertainment yonder, and I wish to be further acquainted with you. Adad, said he, you are the boldest little body that ever I knew; you performed a feat to-day, that made me tremble for you. Had any other man though used my wife so——but I pass that matter over; I see you're too great a hero to be threatened by any one, and I should consider that you did what you did for my sake.

So saying, we all went into a sort of a tavern, and being shewn to a little parlour, I called for a pint of white-wine.

As soon as we were seated, I took my new acquaintance very lovingly by the hand. My dear friend, said I, I have conceived a great respect and fondness for you, and should be glad to know who and what you are. I am a currier by trade, Sir, and my name is Peter Patience. You are patience itself, indeed, said Mr. Clement; but your wife, as I think, has taken the whole trade of the currier into her own hands.

Peter laughed and replied, She is a dear and a sweet girl as ever lay by the side of a man, and she loves me as she loves her own soul. Her blows were sweet blows to me, they were the blows of her affection. For though I did not matter the strokes of my friend Benjamin a single filip, yet every one of them went to her heart, and she wanted to frighten me from ever taking the like again.

But pray, says I, how happened the quarrel between you and your friend Benjamin, as you call him?

him? Why there it is too, said Peter; he also beat me out of his downright and true-hearted kindness to me.

As this is holiday in the afternoon, among us trades folk, Ben Testy invited me to a share of a can of flip, at the Cat and Bagpipes over the way. Just as we sat down, Peter, says he, I am told that your Gatty is with child; I believe it may be so, says I. I am glad of it, Peter, with all my heart; and so now remember that I bespeak myself gossip. Why that may happen, says I, just as matters shall turn out. If the child is a boy, you shall be one of the godfathers, and welcome; but if it is a girl, this cannot be, for my uncle Geoffry has already engaged himself, and I have some expectations from him. And so, says he, you refuse to admit me for your gossip. If it is a girl, says I, you see that I cannot. O he cried, I had forgot, I was a rascal for proposing it: you're of high blood, have high relations, and so scorn to have connections with a poor tradesman like me. That is not the case indeed, my dear Ben, but—Damn your dears, says he, I will have no more of them! you are a covetous scoundrel, and value money more than love. Well, says I, but will you be patient, will you hear reason, my friend? Friend, friend, says he, my curse upon all such friendships! I see into you now. You're an ungrateful, unloving, cold hearted villain, and I would sooner be godfather to a child of the Turk. So saying, he struck at me, and repeated his blows across the table. But as I saw that his choler was inflaming more and more, I got up and retreated, merely intending to defend myself till his passion should be spent upon me. But you saw what happened, gentlemen, which I am heartily sorry for, as I fear that my poor dear fellow is much hurt.

Well, said my tutor, I have heard many definitions, and many disputes concerning the word
Courage,

Courage, but I never saw the thing itself, till this day. Pray Mr. Peter, were you never angry? Scarce ever, Sir, that I remember; at least on my own account; for I do not fear any man that steps upon the earth, and what is it then that should make me angry? A man may be angry, said Mr. Clement, from other motives sure, besides that of fear. God himself can be angry, and yet he cannot possibly fear.

I am feelingly assured, Sir, replied the valiant Peter, that God was never angry in his whole life; and that is a long time, that has neither beginning nor ending. Don't you believe the gospel, says Mr. Clement; the scripture assures us, in a hundred places, of the anger of God against impenitent sinners. I am the son of a clergyman, Sir, said Peter, and mayhap could quote scripture as well as another. The scriptures were written for man; but how should man understand them, if they were not written according to his own language and to his own passions? I will ask you a question, Sir, Can you be angry at a mite or a worm which you can crush into nothing at pleasure? I think not, said my tutor. No certainly, said Peter, because you cannot fear a thing that has not power to offend you. Now all the world is but as a worm or mite, to God; and neither man nor angels can disturb or affect him with any thing, except delight, on their acceptance of that happiness which he desires to give to all his creatures.

Ay but, says Mr. Clement, you see that God's anger and indignation was so great against sin, that nothing could satisfy for it save the death of his beloved son. Ay but, says Peter, the scripture, which you quote, tells you, that it was not his anger but his love that sent him to us. "For God so loved the world," a very sinful world indeed! "that he gave his only begotten son to take his death upon the cross." And I am as fully assured, as I am of my own being, that the same gracious God,

God, who has already redeemed poor sinners, would willingly redeem the poor devils also, if they could but find in their hearts to desire his salvation.

Here, catching and clasping his hand, my dear Peter, says I, I embrace and wish from my heart that your doctrine may be true. I have many tutors, Mr. Peter, and my dada pays them all with pleasure for the instructions that they give me. Tell me then, Mr. Peter, what must he give you for the lesson which you have taught me? What lesson, my hero? A very precious lesson, says I; a lesson that will always teach me "to despise myself for a coward, whenever I shall be angry."

Peter then sprung up, without speaking a word, and hugged, and clasped, and kissed me with all his affections. Then, plucking a button from the upper part of my coat, I will accept of this token, my darling, says he; and will look at it, many a time in the day, for your sake.

But Mr. Peter, says I, I think it would be my advantage to keep up an acquaintance with you, and this cannot be so well done, while your dear Gatty is angry with me. You must therefore promise me to carry a token to her also, as an olive branch of that peace which I want to be made between us. I will, my love, says he; I never refuse to give or accept the favours of a friend. You must be upon honour then, not to reject what I offer you. I am upon honour he said.

I then slipped something into his hand, at which he looked and looked again; and then cried out, from the overflowings of a good and grateful heart, you are either of the blood royal, or ought to be so! For the man was very poor, though so very sensible and well descended, and so he looked upon a little as a great matter.

Here Harry closed his narration, and all the company gathered about him, and nearly smothered him with their caresses, in which little Susanna came in for her full share.

On

On the following day, Harry introduced his friend Vindex and family to his dear dada, who received them with a graciousness that soon dispelled that awkward diffidence and humbling sense of obligations under which the late unhappy preceptor apparently sunk.

As soon as it was known abroad that Mr. Vindex enjoyed the patronage and good countenance of Mr. Fenton and his family, his former friends resorted to him, his acquaintance was sought by all the neighbourhood, his credit was restored, his school daily increased, and, like Job, his latter end was far more blessed than his beginning.

Within a few weeks, Mr. and Mrs. Fielding, with their sister Phæbe, our friend Ned, and a splendid equipage, called and breakfasted at Mr. Fenton's; and, soon after, Mr. Fenton and his Harry, with Mr. and Mrs. Clement, attended their visitants to St. Alban's, where, all together, they spent the happiest night; only that this happiness was blended, at times, with the affecting consideration of parting in the morning.

For two succeeding years and upward little interesting happened, save that our hero increased in stature, and all personal accomplishments, and had happily got over the measles and small pox. He was now nearly master of the Latin and Greek languages. He could outrun the reindeer, and outbound the antelope. He was held in veneration by all masters of the noble science of defence. His action was vigour, his countenance was loveliness, and his movement was grace.

Harry, by this time, was also versed in most of the select and interesting portions of history; Mr. Clement had instructed him in the use of the globes and maps; and as he there led him from clime to clime, and country to country, he brought him acquainted with the different manners, customs, laws, politics, governments, rise, progress, and revolutions

tions of the several nations through which they passed. Finally, said Clement, you see, master Fenton, that the mightiest states, like men, have the principles of growth, as likewise of dissolution, within their own frame. Like men, they are born and die, have their commencement and their period. They arise, like the sun, from the darkness of poverty, to temperance, industry, liberty, valour, power, conquest, glory, **OPULENCE**—and there is their zenith. From whence they decline, to ease, sensuality, venality, vice, corruption, cowardice, imbecility, infamy, **SLAVERY**. And so good night!

Mr. Fenton now judged it full time to give our hero an insight into the nature of the constitution, of his own country; a constitution, of whose construction, poise, action, and counteraction, the lettered Mr. Clement had scarcely any notion; and even the learned in our laws, and the leaders in our senate, but a very confused idea.

For this especial purpose he called Harry to his closet. You are already, my love, said he, a member of the British State; and, on that account, have many privileges to claim, and many duties to perform toward your country in particular, independent of your general duties to mankind.

Should it please God to bless your friends with the continuance of your life for eight or ten years longer, you will then be a member of the legislature of **GREAT BRITAIN**, one of the highest and most important trusts that can be confided by mankind!

Here, my Harry, I have penned, or rather pencilled, for your use, an abstract in miniature of this wonderful constitution. But, before I give it for your study and frequent perusal, I would give you some knowledge of the claims whereon it is founded; as also of the nature of man in his present depraved state, and of his several relations as a subject and as a sovereign.

Man comes into this world, the weakest of all creatures, and while he continues in it, is the most dependent. Nature neither clothes him with the warm fleece of the sheep, nor the gay plumage of the bird; neither does he come forth in the vigour of the foal or the fawn, who, on the hour of their birth, frisk about and exult in the blessing of new existence.

Sacred history, indeed, intimates, that man was originally created invulnerable and immortal; that the fire could not burn him, stones wound, air blast, nor water drown him. That he was the angelic lord and controller of this earth, and these heavens that roll around us; with powers to see, at once, into the essences, natures, properties, and distinctions of things; to unfold all their virtues, to call forth all their beauties, and to rule, subdue, and moderate these elements at pleasure.

These, truly, were god-like gifts, illustrious powers and prerogatives, and well becoming an offspring produced in the express image of an all-potent, all-wise, and all-beneficent Creator.

True, Sir, said Harry; but then we see nothing, now, of all this greatness and glory. Man, on the contrary, is himself subjected to all the elements over which, you say, he was appointed the ruler; he has every thing to fear from every thing about him; even the insects and little midges fearlessly attack and sting this boasted lord of the creation; and history shews, from the beginning of the world, that the greatest of all enemies to man is man.

This, replied Mr. Fenton, is continually to remind him of the depraved and guilty state into which he has fallen. Man, indeed, is now no better than the remains of man; but then these remains are sufficient to prove the lustre and dignity of his original state. When you behold the ruins of some lofty and spacious palace, you immediately form an idea of the original beauty and stateliness of the structure.

Even

Even so, in our present feeble and fractured state, a discerning eye may discover many traces and fragments of man's magnificent ruin—thoughts that wing infinity; apprehensions that reach through eternity; a fancy that creates, an imagination that contains a universe; wishes, that a world hath not where-withal to gratify; and desires, that know neither ending nor bound!

These, however, are but the faint glimmerings of his once glorious illumination. All his primitive faculties are now lapsed and darkened; he is become enslaved to his natural subjects; the world is wrested out of his hands; he comes as an alien into it, and may literally be called "a stranger and pilgrim upon earth."

All other animals are gifted with a clear knowledge and instant discernment of whatever concerns them: man's utmost wisdom, on the contrary, is the bare result of comparing and inferring; a mere inquirer called reason, a substitute in the want of knowledge, a groper in the want of light, he must doubt before he reasons, and examine before he decides.

Thus ignorant, feeble, deeply depraved, and the least sufficient, of all creatures in a state of independence, man is impelled to derive succour, strength, and even wisdom, from society. When he turns a pitying ear and helping hand to the distressed, he is intitled, in his turn, to be heard and assisted. He is interested in others, others are interested in him. His affections grow more diffused, his powers more complicated; and in any society or system of such mutual benevolence, each would enjoy the strength, virtue, and efficacy of the whole.

You have, Sir, said Harry, here drawn an exceeding sweet picture of society, and you know I am but a fool and a novice in such matters; but if any other man breathing had given me such a description, I should, from all my little reading, have

withstood him to the face. Look through all the states and associations that ever were upon earth; throughout the republics of Greece, Italy, Asia Minor, and others, the most renowned for urbanity and virtue; and yet, what do you find them, save so many bands of public robbers and murderers, confederated for the destruction of the rest of mankind? what desolation, what bloodshed, what carnage from the beginning! what a delight in horrors! what a propensity in all to inflict misery upon others! The malignity of the fiends can, I think, pierce no deeper!

Neither is this, Sir, as I take it, the extent of their malevolence. For when any of these bands, or states, as you call them, have conquered or slaughtered all around them, they never fail for want of employment, to fall out among themselves, and cut the throats of their very confederates; and this puts me in mind of what is said by the Prince of Peace, "The prince of this world cometh, and has no part in me." And again he says to the purpose, that fathers and sons, and mothers and daughters, shall be divided against each other; and that "a man's enemies shall be those of his own household."

I lately met with a fragment of an epic poem, that struck me wonderfully at the time; and I recollect some of the lines that contain, in my opinion, the most genuine, the truest picture that ever was drawn of the state of mankind.

"Man comes into this passing world in weakness,

"And cries for help to man,—for feeble is he,
"And many are his foes. Thirst, hunger, nakedness;

"Diseases infinite within his frame;

"Without, inclemency, the wrath of seasons,

"Famines, pests, plagues, devouring elements,

"Earthquakes,

- " Earthquakes beneath, the thunders rolling o'er
 " him ;
 " Age and infirmity on either hand ;
 " And death, who shakes the certain dart behind
 " him !
 " These, surely, one might deem, were ills suf-
 " ficient.
 " Man thinks not so ; on his own race he turns
 " The force of all his talents, exquisite
 " To shorten the short interval, by art,
 " Which nature left us—Fire and sword are in
 " His hand, and in his heart are machinations,
 " For speeding of perdition.—Half the world,
 " Down the steep gulph of dark futurity,
 " Push off their fellows, pause upon the brink,
 " And then drop after."

Say then, my dearest father, tell me, whence comes this worse than flinty, this cruel heartedness in man? Why are not all like you? Why are they not happy in communicating happiness? If my eyes did not daily see it, in fact, as well as in history, I should think it impossible that any one should derive pleasure from giving pain to another. Can it be more blessed to destroy than to preserve, to afflict than to gladden, to wound than to heal. My heart wrings with regret for being cast into a world, where nation against nation, family against family, and man against man, are perpetually embattled, grudging, coveting, grasping, tearing every enjoyment, every property, and life itself, from each other.

Here Harry, for a while, held his handkerchief to his eyes; while his fond uncle dropt a silent tear of delight, at beholding the amiable emotion of his beloved.

Take care, my Harry, rejoined Mr. Fenton, beware of the smallest tincture of uncharitableness! You see only the worse part, the outward shell of this

this world; while the kernel, the better part, is concealed from your eyes. There are millions of worthy people and affectionate saints upon earth; but they are as a kingdom within a kingdom, a grain within a husk; it requires a kindred heart and a curious eye to discover them. Evil in man, is like evil in the elements: earthquakes, hurricanes, thunders, and lightnings are conspicuous, noisy, glaring; while goodness, like warmth and moisture, is silent and unperceived, though productive of all the beauties and benefits in nature.

I once told you, my darling, that all the evil which is in you belongs to yourself, and that all the good which is in you belongs to your God. That you cannot in or of yourself, so much as think a good thought or form a good wish, or oppose a single temptation or evil motion of any kind. And what I then said of you, may equally be said of all men, and of the highest angels now in bliss.

No creature can be better than a CRAVING AND DARK DESIRE. No efforts of its own can possibly kindle the smallest portion of light or of love; till God, by giving himself, gives his light and love into it.

Here lies the eternal difference between evil and good, between the creature and the Creator; the spirits who are now in darkness, are there for no other reason, but for their desire of a proud and impossible independence; for their rejecting the light and love of that God, in whom, however, they live, and move, and have their desolate being.

God is already the fulness of all possible things; he has, therefore, all things to give, but nothing to desire. The creature, while empty of God, is a wanting desire; it has all things to crave, but nothing to bestow. No two things, in the universe, can be more opposite, more contrasted.

Remember, therefore, this distinction in yourself and all others; remember that, when you feel
or

or see any instance of selfishness, you feel and see the coveting, grudging, and grappling of the creature; but that when you feel or see any instance of benevolence, you feel and see the informing influence of your God. All possible vice and malignity subsists in the one; all possible virtue, all possible beauty, all possible blessedness, subsists in the other.

As God alone is Love, and nothing but Love; no arguments of our own can reason love into us, no efforts of our own can possibly attain it. It must spring up, within us, from the divine bottom or source, wherein our existence stands! and it must break through the dark and narrow womb of self, into sentiments and feelings of good-will for others, before this child of God can be born into the world.

Self is wholly a miser, it contracts what it possesses, and at the same time attracts all that it doth not possess. It at once shuts out others from its own proposed enjoyments, and would draw into its little whirlpool whatever others enjoy.

Love, on the contrary, is a giving, not a craving; an expansion, not a contraction; it breaks in pieces the condensing circle of self, and goes forth in the delightfulness of its desire to bless.

Self is a poor, dark, and miserable avariciousness, incapable of enjoying what it hath, through its grappling and grasping at what it hath not. The impossibility of its holding all things, makes it envious of those who are in possession of any thing; and envy kindles the fire of hell, wrath, and wretchedness, throughout its existence.

Love, on the other hand, is rich, enlightening, and full of delight: the bounteousness of its wishes makes the infinity of its wealth; and without seeking or requiring, it cannot fail of finding its own enjoyment and blessedness, in its desire to communicate and diffuse blessing and enjoyment.

But

But is it not, Sir, a very terrible thing, said Harry, for poor creatures, to be evil, by the necessity of their nature.

You mistake this matter, my Harry; you take the emptiness, darkness, and desire in the creature, to be the evil of the creature. They are, indeed, the only possible cause of evil, in or to any creature; but they are exceedingly far from being an evil, in themselves; they are, on the contrary, the only, the necessary and indispensable foundation, whereon any creaturely benefit can be built. It is extremely good for the creature to be poor and weak, and empty, and dark, and desiring; for hereby he becomes a capacity, for being supplied with all the riches, power, glories, and blessedness of his God.

As God is, every where, in and of himself, the fulness of all possible beings and beatitudes, he cannot create any thing independent or out of himself; they cannot be, but by being both in him and by him. Could it be otherwise, could any creature be wise, or powerful, or happy, in and of itself, what a poor and stunted happiness must that have been? its blessedness, in that case, must have been limited, like its being; and how infinitely, my child, should we then have fallen short of "that eternal weight of glory" intended for us. But God has been graciously pleased to provide better things. If we humbly and desirously depend upon him, we become entitled to all that he has, and that he is. He will enlighten our darkness with his own illumination; he will inform our ignorance with his own wisdom; his omnipotence will become the strength of our weakness; he himself will be our rectitude and guide from all error; he will purify our pollution; put his own robe on our nakedness; enrich our poverty with the heart-felt treasures of himself; and we shall be as so many mirrors wherein our divine friend and
father

father shall delight to behold the express image of his own person, his own perfections and beatitudes represented for ever !

O Sir, exclaimed Harry, how you gladden, how you transport me ! I shall now no longer repine at my own weakness, or blindness, or ignorance, or insufficiency of any kind ; since all these are but as so many vessels prepared to contain pearls of infinite price, even the riches, the enjoyment and fulness of my God. Never will I seek or desire, never will I accept any thing, less than himself.

You must, my child, said Mr. Fenton : you are still in the flesh, in a carnal and propertied world ; your old man must be fed though not pampered ; it must be mortified, but not slain.

You read, in the third chapter of Genesis, how our first father lusted after the sensual fruits of this world ; how he wilfully brake the sole commandment of his God ; how he added to his apostacy the guilt of aspiring at independence ; how he trusted to the promise and virtue of creatures, for making him equal in godhead to the Creator ; how in that day he died the fearfullest of all deaths, a death to the fountain of life, light, and love within him ; and how his eyes were opened to perceive the change of his body into grossness, corruption, diseases, and mortality, conformable to the world, to which he had turned his faith, and into which he had cast himself.

Now, had man continued in this state, his spirit, which had turned from God into its own creaturely emptiness, darkness, and desire, must have so continued for ever, in its own hell and misery, without the possibility of exciting or acquiring the smallest spark of benevolence or virtue of any kind. But God, in compassion to Adam, and more especially in compassion to his yet unfinning progeny, infused, into his undying essence, a small embryo

or reconception of that lately forfeited image, which, in creation, had borne the perfect likeness of the Creator.

From hence arises the only capacity of any goodness in man. And, according as we suppress, or quench, or encourage and foster this heavenly seed, or infant offspring of God within us; in such proportion we become either evil, malignant, and reprobate; or benevolent, and replete with divine propensities and affections.

Now, Harry, let us turn our eyes to our gross and outward man; for, as I told you, it must be cared for, and sustained agreeable to its nature: and it is well deserving of our attention; forasmuch as it is the husk, the habitation, and temple of that god-like conception, which, when matured, is to break forth into never-ending glory.

Lastly, this same outward man is further to be regarded by us, forasmuch as his infirmities, frailties, distemperatures, afflictions, aches, and anguishes, are so intimately felt by his divine inmate, that they occasionally excite those thousand social charities, relations, and endearments, that, with links of golden love connect the brotherhood of man.

It is, therefore, worth while to enquire into the claims and rights of this close, though gross companion; at least, so far as may be requisite for his necessary, if not comfortable subsistence upon earth.

We find that God has intrusted him with life, liberty, and strength to acquire property for his sustenance. It is therefore his duty to preserve all these trusts inviolate; for, as they are wedded to his nature, "what God hath so joined, let no man put asunder."

If these were not, my Harry, the natural, inheritable, and indefeasible rights of all men, there would be no wrong, no injustice, in depriving all you should meet, of their liberty, their lives, and properties,

properties, at pleasure. For, all laws that were ever framed for the good government of men (even with the divine decalogue) are no other than faint transcripts of that eternal LAW OF BENEVOLENCE, which was written and again retraced in the bosom of the first man, and which all his posterity ought to observe, without further obligation.

The capital apostle, St. Paul, bears testimony also, to the impression of this Law of Rights on the consciences and hearts of all men, where he says, in the second chapter of his epistle to the Romans, "Not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified. For, when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves: which shews the work of the law written in their hearts; their consciences also bearing witness, and their thoughts, the mean-while, accusing or else excusing one another."

But, Sir, interrupted Harry, I am quite astonished at the falling off of the father of mankind. So infinitely benefited and obliged as he was, so necessarily dependent also on his omnipotent Benefactor; how foolish, how base, how ungrateful, how unpardonable, as I think, was his wonderful apostacy! Wretched creatures that we are! no sound branch, to be sure, could ever spring from so debased, so cankered a stock.

Let us not be prone to judge of others, my Harry. I am confident, as I am of my being, that had you or I been in the case and place of Adam, we should have fallen in like manner. He had an old and a very subtle adversary to deal with. He felt himself powerful, glorious, and happy. He had no notion that his present state could change for the worse. He was yet a novice in existence. He could form no conception of the depravity,
pains,

pains, and mortality, that afterward ensued. And he was strongly tempted by sensual objects from without, and by the emotions of his creaturely nature within him. But of this I am assured, Harry, that, if he was the greatest sinner, he was also the greatest and most contrite penitent that ever existed; as the comparison of his first with his latter state, must have given him the most poignant and bitter compunctions, and must have caused him, with ten-fold energy, to cling to that Rock from which he was hewn, but from whence he had fallen.

I have already shewn you, Harry, that every man has a right in his person and property; and that this right is natural, inheritable, and indefeasible. No consent of parties, no institution, can make any change in this great and fundamental law of right; it is universal, invariable, and unalienable, to any man or system of men. It is only defeasible in particular cases; as where one man by assailing the safety of another, justly forfeits the title which he had to his own safety.

If human nature had never fallen into a state of inordinate appetite, all laws and legal restraints would have been as needless and impertinent, as the study and practice of physic, in a country exempted from mortality and disease. But, for as much as all men are tyrants by nature; all prone to covet and grasp at the rights of others; the great **LAW OF SAFETY TO ALL**, can no otherwise be assured, than by **THE RESTRAINT OF EACH FROM DOING INJURY TO ANY**.

On this lamentable occasion, on this sad necessity of man's calling for help against man, is founded every intention and end of civil government. All laws that do not branch from this stem, are cankered or rotten. All political edifices that are not built and sustained upon this foundation, "of defending the weak against the oppressor," must tumble into a tyranny, even worse than that
anarchy

anarchy which is called the state of nature, where individuals are unconnected by any social band. But if such a system could be framed, whereby wrong should not be permitted or dispensed within any man, right would consequently ensue, and be enjoyed by all men, and this would be the perfection of CIVIL LIBERTY.

Sir, says Harry, I have heard some very learned men affirm, that God, in whom is the disposal of all lives and all properties, has given to some a right of ruling over others; that governors are his vicegerents and representatives upon earth; and that he hath appointed the descendible and hereditary rights of fathers over families, of patriarchs over tribes, and of kings over nations.

In a qualified sense, my Harry, their affirmation may be just: all the agents and instruments and dispensers of beneficence, whether their sphere be small or great, are God's true representatives and vicegerents upon earth: he hath given authority to the tenderness of parents over their progeny: and he hath invested patriarchs and kings with the rights of protection. But God never gave the vulture a right to rule over the dove-cote; never gave up the innocent many for a prey to the tyrannous few: God never can take pleasure in the breaches of the law of his own righteousness and benignity. Arbitrary regents are no further of his appointment, than the evils of earthquakes and hurricanes; as where he is said "to give the wicked a king in his anger; and to set over the nations the basest of men."

The God of all right cannot will wrong to any; "His service is perfect freedom." It is his pleasure, to deliver from "the land of slavery, and the house of bondage:" he is the God of equity and good-will to all his creatures; he founds his own authority, not in power, but beneficence. The law, therefore, of safety and well-being to
all,

all, is founded in the nature of God himself, eternal, immutable, and indispensable.

One man may abound in strength, authority, possessions; but no man may have greater right than another. The beggar has as much right to his cloak and his scrip, as the king to his ermines and crown-lands.

To fence and to establish this divinely inherent right, of *security to the person and property of man*, has been the study and attempt of Hermes, Confucius, Minos, Lycurgus, Solon, Numa, and of all the legislators and systems of civil polity, that ever warmed the world with a single ray of freedom.

But so strong is the propensity to usurpation in man; so dangerous is it to tempt trustees with the investiture of power; so difficult to watch the watchers, to restrain the restrainers from injustice; that, whether the government were committed to the One, the Few, or the Many, the parties entrusted have generally proved traitors; and deputed power has almost perpetually been seized upon as property.

Monarchy has ever been found to rush head-long into tyranny; aristocracy into faction and multiplied usurpation; and democracy into tumult, confusion, and violence. And all these, whether distinct or compounded with each other, have ended in the supremacy of some arbitrary tyrant, enabled, by a body of military mercenaries, to rule, oppress, and spoil the people at pleasure.

How England hath come, after the many wrecks and ruins which you have read of in history, to survive, to recover, to grow sounder from her wounds, and mightier from her discomfitures; and to rise superior, as we trust, to all future external and internal attempts; hath been owing to the peculiarity of her constitution.

Her

Her constitution, it is true, is not yet quit, perhaps never ought to be quit, of some intestine commotions. For, though liberty has no relation to party dissension, or cabal against government; there is yet a kind of yeast observable in its nature, which may be necessary to the fermentation and working up of virtue to the degree that is requisite for the production of patriotism and public spirit. But when this yeast of liberty happens to light upon weak or vapid tempers, they are immediately affected, like small beer casks, and rave and boil over in abundance of factious sputter and turbulence. Party and faction therefore, being the scum and ebullition of this animating yeast, are sure signs and proofs of the life of liberty, though they neither partake nor communicate any portion of its beneficence; as rank weeds are the proof of a hot sun and luxuriant soil, though they are the detestable consequence of the one and the other.

“*Salus Populi—Public Safety—Security to the “Persons and Properties of the People;”* constitutes the whole of England’s polity. Here empire is “*Imperium legum*, the sway of law;” it is the dispensation of beneficence, of equal right to all: and this empire rises supreme over king, lords, and commons; and is appointed to rule the rulers, to the end of time.

Other states, before now, have been compounded, like ours, of prince, peers, and people, the one, few, and many united. But the error and failure of their constitution was this: The People, who are the Fountain of all Power, either retained, in their own hands, an authority which they never were qualified to wield; or deputed it to trustees without account; without a provident resource, or due reserve of potency, when “those “instructed with government should be found to “betray their trust.”

The

The people of England, on the contrary, claim no authority in government; neither in the framing, administration, or execution of the laws, by which they consent to be governed. They are themselves imaged, and as it were epitomised, in their three several estates. The king represents their majesty; the lords their nobility; and the commons, more immediately, their legislative power. The constitution is the inheritance of them and their posterity; and theirs is the right and duty, at all times, to watch over, assert, and reclaim it. Wherefore, as you find in history, when any of the three estates have usurped upon the others; even when all of them together have dared to violate the frame of this salutary constitution; the people, to whom it belongs, have never failed, as on the other day's revolution, to restore and reinstate it.

England's three estates, of kings, lords, and commons, are parts of the people, under covenant with the people, and accountable to the people; but the people, as a people, make not any of the said estates. They are as a perpetual fountain, from whence the three estates arise; or rather as a sea of waters, in which three exalted waves should claim pre-eminence, which yet shall not be able to depart from their fund, but in rotation are dissoluble and resolvable therein.

Thus, however complicated the system of England's polity may be, it is all rooted in and branches from the *trust of the people*, the trust of powers which they have granted to be returned in protection. And, in truth, it makes little difference whether the powers, in such cases, be granted or assumed; whoever either receives or assumes such powers, save to the ends of beneficence, is equally guilty of usurpation and tyranny.

Government can have no powers, save the powers of the people; to wit, the power of their numbers, strength and courage, in time of war; and
in

in peace, of their art and industry, and the wealth arising therefrom. Whoever assumes to himself these powers, or any part thereof, without the consent of the proprietors, is a robber, and should, at least, be divested of the spoil.

On the other hand, if such powers are granted by the people, the people cannot grant them for purposes to which they themselves cannot lawfully apply them. No man, for instance, can arbitrarily dispose of his own life or liberty, neither of the whole product of his own labours; forasmuch as the lives of himself and his family should be first sustained thereby, and his obligations to others fairly and fully discharged. He cannot therefore grant an arbitrary disposal of what he hath, not an arbitrary disposal in himself. Much less can any man grant a power over the lives, liberties, or properties of other people, as it would be criminal and highly punishable in himself to assail them.

Hence it follows, as evident as any object at noon, that "no man, or body of men, can rightfully assume, or even accept, what no man or body of men can rightfully grant," to wit, a power that is arbitrary or injurious to others. And hence it necessarily follows, that all usurpations of such powers, throughout the earth, with all actual or pretended covenants, trusts, or grants, for the investiture or conveyance of such illicit powers, are null and void on the execution: and that no man, or nations of men, can possibly be bound by any consents or contracts, evasive of the laws of God and their own nature, of common sense and general equity, of eternal reason and truth.

I beg pardon, Sir, says Harry, for interrupting you once more; but you desire that I should always speak my mind with freedom. You have delighted me greatly with the account which you gave of the benefits and sweets of *Liberty*, and of
its

its being equally the claim and birth-right of all men; and I wish to heaven that they had an equal enjoyment thereof. But this you know, Sir, is very far from being the case; and that this animating fire, which ought to comfort all who come into the world, is now nearly extinguished throughout the earth.

O Sir, if this divine, *golden law of liberty* were observed, if *all were restrained from doing injury to any*; what a heaven we should speedily have upon earth. The habit of such a restraint would in time suppress every motion to evil. The weak would have the mightiness of this law for their support; the poor would have the benevolence thereof for their riches. Under the light and delightful yoke of such a restraint, how would industry be encouraged, to plant and to multiply the vine and the fig-tree; how would benignity rejoice, to call neighbours and strangers to come and fearlessly partake of the fruits thereof.

How has the sacred name of all-benefiting *Liberty* been perverted and profaned, by the mouths of madding demagogues at the head of their shouting rabble, who mean no other than a licentious unmuzzling from all restraint, that they may ravage and lay desolate the works and fruits of peace!

But liberty, in your system, is a real and essential good; the only source, indeed, whence any good can arise. I see it, I revere it, it shines by its own light in the evidence of your description!

How is it then, Sir, that there are persons so blind, or so bigotted against their own interests, and those of their fellows, as to declaim with much energy and studied argumentation against this divine, inheritable, and indefeasible right (not of kings, as it should seem) but of human kind?

I lately happened in company with a number of discontentedly looking gentlemen, whom I supposed
to

to have been abettors of the late king James, and friends to the arrogating family of the Stewarts. Among them was one of some learning and great cleverness, and he paraded and shewed away, at a vast rate, concerning the divinely inherent right of monarchs, implicit submission, passive obedience, non-resistance, and what not.

Our God, said he, is one God; and the substitutes of his Mightiness should resemble himself; their power ought to be absolute, unquestioned, and undivided. The sun is his glorious representative in the heavens; and monarchs are his representatives and mirrors upon earth, in whom he is pleased to behold the reflection of his own Majesty.

Accordingly we find, that the monarchs over his chosen people were of his special appointment; and that their persons were rendered sacred and awfully inviolable, by unction, or the shedding of hallowed oil upon them. Many miscarriages and woful defaults are recorded of Saul, as a man; yet as a king, he was held perfect in the eyes of his people. What an unhesitating obedience, what a speechless submission do they pay to all his behests! Though he massacred their whole priesthood, to a man, in one day, yet no murmur was heard; no one dared to wag a tongue, and much less to lift a finger against the Lord's anointed.

I own to you, Sir, that this last argument staggered me; such an express authority of the sacred writings put me wholly to silence. Say then, my dearest father, give me the benefit of your enlightening sentiments on this head; that I may know, on all occasions, to give to all men an account of the political faith that is in me.

It is extremely surprising, rejoined Mr. Fenton, that all our lay and ecclesiastical champions for arbitrary power, who have raised such a dust, and kept such a coil about the divine, hereditary, and indefeasible right of kings, and the unconditional duty

duty of passive obedience in the subject; have founded their whole pile of argument and oratory, on the Divine appointment of the regal government of the Jews, as the perfect model and example, whereby all other states are, in like manner, required to form their respective governments.

Now, if these champions had engaged on the opposite side of the question, and had undertaken the argument against arbitrary power, they could not have done it more effectually, more conclusively, more unanswerably, than by shewing that *arbitrary power* was the very *evil* so displeasing to the nature of God, that he exhibited his omnipotence in a series of public and astonishing wonders, in order to deliver this very people from the grievance thereof; and more especially, to proclaim to all nations and ages the detestation in which his *eternal justice* holds all lawless dispensations, all acts of *sovereign power* that are not acts of *protection*.

Could these champions, again, have better enforced the argument against arbitrary power, than by shewing that this people, so miraculously enfranchised, but now fat and wantonly kicking under the indulgence of their God, had taking a loathing to the righteousness of the dispensations of their deliverer, "had rejected him," as he affirms, "from reigning over them;" and had required a *King*, like to the kings of the neighbouring nations? the very *evil* from which God had redeemed their forefathers!

Could these champions, further, have better demonstrated the miseries, the iniquities, the abominations of such a government, than by reciting the expostulations, the tender and earnest remonstrances of God himself, on the sufferings that these rebels were about to bring upon themselves from the enormities of an arbitrary and unlimited sovereignty? And lastly, could they have better recommended,

commended, to the free and the virtuous, to stand out, to the death, against arbitrary oppression, than by shewing the obstinacy of these apostate Jews, when they answered to the compassionating expostulations of their God—"Nay, but we will have "a king, like all the nations, to rule over us."

Nothing, my Harry, can be more unaccountable, more astonishing, than the perverseness of that stiff-necked nation.

They daily drank the bitterest dregs of slavery; they had been galled by double chains; and had groaned under an unprecedented tyranny and oppression. They cried out to their God, and he miraculously delivered them from the land of their misery, and from the house of their bondage. Yet, on the first cravings of appetite, these soul-sensualized wretches desired to be returned to their chains and their flesh-pots; and longed to groan and gormandize in their old sty.

Hereupon God gave them flesh and bread to the full; and he brought them into a land "flowing with milk and honey," and abounding with all the good things of this life. He made them a free and sovereign people; discomfited their enemies before them; and informed their judges with his own spirit, for the dispensation of righteousness; insomuch that "every man sat under his own vine, "and did what was right in his own eyes." And yet they lasciviously petitioned to be subjected to a state of *absolute despotism*; and this, for no assigned reason, save because it was the fashion: "Make us "a king to judge us, like to all the nations around "us."

Here God, in the same act, approves his attributes of mercy and reluctant justice to his erring creatures. He punishes their rebellion, by no greater a severity than the grant of their request.

"And the Lord said unto Samuel, Hearken unto "the voice of the people in all that they say unto
"thee:

“ thee: for they have not rejected thee, but they
 “ have rejected me, that I should not reign over
 “ them. Howbeit, protest solemnly unto them,
 “ and shew them the manner of the king that shall
 “ reign over them.

“ And Samuel told all the words of the Lord unto
 “ to the people that asked of him a king. And he
 “ said, this will be the manner of the king that shall
 “ reign over you:

“ He will take your sons and appoint them for
 “ himself, for his chariots, and to be his horsemen.
 “ And some shall run before his chariots. And he
 “ will appoint him captains over thousands, and captains
 “ over fifties, and will set them to ear his
 “ ground, and to reap his harvest. And he will take
 “ your daughters to be confectioners, and cooks, and
 “ bakers. And he will take your fields, and your
 “ vineyards, and your olive yards, even the best
 “ of them. And he will take your men-servants,
 “ and your maid-servants, and your goodliest young
 “ men, and your asses, and put them to his work,
 “ and ye shall be his servants. And ye shall cry
 “ out in that day, because of your king, which ye
 “ shall have chosen you; and the Lord will not hear
 “ you in that day.

“ Nevertheless, the people refused to obey the
 “ voice of the Lord and of Samuel; and they said,
 “ Nay, but we will have a king over us.”

And now, Harry, what do you gather from all these sacred authorities? I gather, Sir, answered Harry, from the express and repeated declarations of holy writ, that whoever he be, whether sovereign or subject, who doth not wish that all men should be limited or restrained from doing injury to any, is a rebel to the will of the *God of beneficence*, and an enemy to the *well-being of human kind*.

You have exclaimed Mr. Fenton, you have, in a few words, spoke the whole of the matter. On what you have said, hang all the law and the prophets.

Again,

Again, my dear, continued Mr. Fenton, it is evident from the history, that the Jews themselves did not pay the smallest regard to the divine hereditary right of kingship. Both David and Solomon, the second and third in succession, were established on the throne in direct contradiction to such pretended right. And on the succession of Rehoboam, the fourth king, ten of the twelve tribes repented of their submission to an arbitrary monarchy, and required the king to consent to a limitation of his authority, and to enter into a contract with the people.

“ And they spake unto Rehoboam, saying, Thy father made our yoke grievous : now therefore make thou the grievous service of thy father, and his heavy yoke which he put upon us, lighter, and we will serve thee.”

But when Rehoboam, by the advice of his sleek-headed ministry, refused to covenant with the people, the ten tribes cried out, “ What portion have we in David ? neither have we inheritance in the son of Jesse ; to your tents, O Israel !” And thus the ten tribes revolted from the arbitrary domination of the houses of Saul and David. For as the sacred text says, “ *The cause was from the Lord.*”

Now when these ten tribes sent and called Jeroboam the son of Nebat, and made him king over Israel ; it is most evident, that they obliged him to limit the regal authority, and to covenant with them for the restoration and re-establishment of their popular rights. For, in the sixth succession, when Ahab sat upon the throne, the regal prerogative had not yet so far usurped on the constitutional rights of the people, as to entitle Ahab to deprive his subjects even of a garden for herbs.

“ And Ahab said unto Naboth, Give me thy vineyard, that I may have it for a garden of herbs, because it is near unto my house ; and I will give thee

“ thee for it a better vineyard ; or if it seems good
 “ to thee, I will give thee the worth of it in money.
 “ But Naboth said to Ahab, The Lord forbade
 “ that I should give the inheritance of my fathers
 “ unto thee. So Ahab came to his house
 “ heavy displeased, because Naboth had said, I will
 “ not give to thee the inheritance of my fathers :
 “ and he laid him down upon his bed, and turned
 “ away his face, and would eat no bread.”

Here we see that the people of Israel had so far recovered their originally inherent and hereditary rights, that the regal estate had not the privilege of wresting, from any subject, so much as an herb-garden.

This was a mortifying circumstance to royal elevation ; but power is seldom unfruitful of expedients. A method was found of rending away Naboth's property (without his consent) *under colour of the law to which he had consented*. He was falsely impeached, and forfeited his life and inheritance together. But God, by the signal punishment which he inflicted, for this breach on the natural rights of his people, evinced to the world, how dear they are in the eye of *eternal justice*.

How deplorable then, my Harry, is the suppression of these rights, now nearly universal throughout the earth ! But when people, from their infancy, and from generation to generation, have been habituated to bondage, oppression, and submission ; without any tradition or memorial delivered down to them, of a happier or more equitable manner of life ; they are accustomed to look on themselves, their possessions, and their progeny, as the rightful property of their rulers, to be disposed of at pleasure ; and they no more regret the want of Liberty that they never knew, than the blind born regret the want of the light of the sun.

Before I give you this paper that I have in my hand, this epitome or picture, in miniature, of the
 incomparable

incomparable beauties of the Britannic constitution, it may be requisite to premise a few matters.

Travellers, when they survey a grand Egyptian pyramid, are apt to enquire by whom the stupendous pile was erected, and how long it hath stood the assaults of time. But when nothing of this can be developed, imagination runs back through antiquity, without bounds; and thence contemplates an object, with peculiar veneration, that appears as it were to have had no beginning.

Such a structure is the constitution of Great Britain! No records discover when it had a commencement; neither can any annals specify the time at which it was not.

William the Norman, above seven hundred years ago, on his entering into the original contract with the people, engaged to govern them according to the *bonæ et approbatæ antiquæ regni leges*, the good, well approved, and ancient laws of the kingdom; this constitution was therefore ancient, even in ancient times.

More than eighteen hundred years are now elapsed since Julius Cæsar, in the sixth book of his commentaries, bore testimony as well to the antiquity as excellency of the system of the laws of Britain. He tells us, that the venerable order of the Druids, who then administered justice throughout Gaul, derived their system of government from Britain; and that it was customary for those who were desirous of being versed in the said ancient institutions, to go over to Britain for that purpose.

Cæsar seems to recommend, while he specifies, one of the laws that was then peculiar to the constitution of Britain. He tells you, that, if a woman was suspected of the death of her husband, she was questioned thereupon with severity "by her neighbours;" and that, if she was found guilty, she was tied alive to a stake, and burned to death. The

very trial used in Britain, "by a jury of neighbours," to this day.

It is, hence, very obvious, that our Gothic ancestors either adopted what they judged excellent in the British constitution, or rather superadded what was deemed to be excellent in their own.

The people who went under the general name of Goths, were of many different nations, who from the Northern, poured down on the more Southern parts of Europe.

Their kings were, originally, chiefs or generals, appointed to lead voluntary armies, or colonies, for the forming of new settlements in foreign lands; and they were followed by a free and independent multitude, who had previously stipulated that they should share and enjoy the possessions which their valour should conquer.

Next to the general, in order, the officers or principal men of the army were attended, on such expeditions, by their kinsfolk, friends, and dependents, who chose to attach themselves to their persons and fortunes respectively; and such attachments gave these officers great power and consideration.

On their conquest or seizure of any track of country, a certain portion thereof was allotted to the general, for the maintenance of his person and household. The general then divided the remainder among his officers, to hold of him, in fief, at the certain service of so many horse or foot, well armed and provided, &c. and proportioned to the value and extent of the land assigned. And the said officers again, parcelled out the greatest part of the said possessions, among their respective followers, to hold of themselves, in like manner and service as they held of their general.

On the conquest of a country, they seldom chose to exterminate the natives or old inhabitants, but allotted to them also separate remnants of the land; and

and admitted them to the common and equal participation of such laws or usages as they brought from their own country, or chose to adopt.

Independent of the military services above reserved, the prince, or chief, further reserved the civil service or personal attendance of his feudatory officers, at certain times, and for certain terms, at his general or national court. This court was composed of three estates, the prince, the nobles, and such of the priesthood, whether Pagan or Christian, as held in fief from the prince; and from this *national council* our *parliament* took its origin.

The feudal officers also, on their part, reserved the like service and personal attendance of their proper tenants and vassals, at their respective courts of judicature. And for as much as, in such courts, no civil or criminal sentence could take place, till the voice of the judge was affirmed by the court, which consisted of such as were peers, or equals to the party accused; from thence we derive our free, ancient, and sacred institution of *juries*.

If we look back upon one of those fief or feudal kings, seated high on his throne, and encircled with all the ensigns of royalty; when we find him intitled the sole proprietor of all the lands within his dominions; when we hear his subjects acknowledge, that he alone is the fountain from whence are derived all possessions, rights, titles, distinctions, and dignities; when we see his most potent prefects and nobles, with lifted hands and bended knees, swearing fealty at his feet; who would not take him for an arbitrary and most absolute prince?

Such a judgment, however, would have been very premature. No prince could be more limited. He had not the licence of doing hurt to the person or property of the meanest vassal throughout his dominions. But was he the less powerful, think you, for being less absolute? quite the contrary. While he acted within the sphere of his compact with the

people, he acted in all the persons and powers of the people. Though prescribed with respect to evil, the extent of his beneficence was wholly unconfined. He was not dreaded indeed, but on that account, he was the more revered and beloved by his subjects. He was a part of themselves; the principal member of their body. In him they beheld, with delight, their own dignity and strength so gloriously represented; and by being the proprietor of all their hearts, he became the master of all their hands.

O, exclaimed Harry, who would wish, after this, to be unrestrained from any kind of evil? how frightful, how detestable is that power, which is not exercised in acts of benevolence alone! and all, who please, may be infinite in the stretch of a good-will.

True, my dear, said Mr. Fenton——I have now, continued he, given you the rough and unformed rudiments of our Britannic constitution. And here I deliver to you my little model of the finished construction thereof, as it now stands on the Revolution just atchieved by his present glorious majesty king William.

Your reading has informed you, and may further inform you, of the several steps and struggles whereby this great business was finally effected. It was not suddenly brought to pass; it was the work of many ages; while Britain, like Antæus, though often defeated, rose more vigorous and reinforced from every foil. Of times long passed, what stupendous characters! what sacred names! what watchful councils! what bloody effusions! what a people of heroes! what senates of sages! How hath the invention of nature been stretched, how have the veins of the valiant been exhausted, to form, support, reform, and bring to maturity, this unexampled constitution, this coalescence and
grand

grand effort of every human virtue, *British Liberty!*

[Here follows Mr. Fenton's short system of the beauties and benefits of our constitution. But if the reader loves amusement preferable to instruction; he is at liberty to pass it over, and proceed in the story.]

The REGAL ESTATE.

THE king, in the constitution of Great Britain, is more properly the king of, than a king over the people, united to them, one of them, and contained in them. At the same time that he is acknowledged the head of their body, he is their principal servant or minister, being the depute of their executive power.

His claim to the throne is not a claim, as of some matter of property or personal right; he doth not claim, but is claimed by the people in their parliament; and he is claimed or called upon, not to the investiture of possessions, but the performance of duties. He is called upon to govern the people according to the laws by which they themselves have consented to be governed; to cause justice and mercy to be dispensed throughout the realm; and to his utmost, to execute, protect, and maintain the laws of the gospel of God, and the rights and liberties of all the people without distinction: and this he swears on the gospel of God to perform. And thus, as all others owe allegiance to the king, *the king himself oweth allegiance to the constitution.*

The

The existence of a king, as one of the three estates, is immutable, indispensable, and indefeasible: the constitution cannot subsist without a king. But then, his personal claim of possession, and of hereditary succession to the throne, is in several instances precarious and defeasible: as in case of any natural incapacity to govern; or of an open avowal of principles incompatible with the constitution; or in case of overt-acts demonstrative of such principles; or of any attempt to sap, or overthrow a fundamental part of that system, which he was called in, and constituted, and has sworn to maintain.

Though the claim of all kings to the throne of Great Britain is a limited and defeasible claim; yet the world can afford no rival, in power or glory, to a *constitutional sovereign* of these free dominions.

For the honour of their own body, they have invested this their head with all possible illustration: he concentrates the rays of many nations. They have clothed him in royal robes, and circled his head with a diadem, and enthroned him on high; and they bow down before the mirror of their own majesty.

Neither are his the mere ensigns or external shows of regency: he is invested also with powers, much more real than if they were absolute.

There are three capital prerogatives, with which the king is entrusted, which, at first sight, appear of fearful and dangerous tendency; and which must infallibly and quickly end in arbitrary dominion, if they were not counterpoised and counteracted.

His principal prerogative is to make war or peace, as also treaties, leagues, and alliances with foreign potentates.

His second prerogative is to nominate and appoint all ministers and servants of state, all judges
and

and administrators of justice, and all officers, civil or military, throughout these realms.

His third capital prerogative is, that he should have the whole executive power of the government of these nations, by his said ministers and officers, both civil and military.

I might here also have added a fourth prerogative, which must have been capitally everfive of the constitution, had it not been limited in the original trust; I mean a power of granting pardon to criminals. Had this power been unrestrained, all obligations to justice might be absolved at the king's pleasure. An evil king might even encourage the breach of law: he must, unquestionably, have dispensed with all illicit acts that were perpetrated by his own orders; and this assurance of pardon must, as unquestionably, have encouraged all his ministers and officers to execute his will, as the only rule of their obedience.

But God, and our glorious ancestors be praised! he is restrained from protecting his best beloved ministers, when they have effected, or even imagined the damage of the constitution. He is also limited in appeals brought by the subject for murder or robbery. But on indictments in his own name, for offences against his proper person and government, such as rebellion, insurrection, riot, and breaches of the peace by murder, main, or robbery, &c. here he is at liberty to extend the arm of his mercy; forasmuch as there are many cases so circumstanced, so admissive of pitiable and palliating considerations, that *summum jus*, or strict justice, might prove *summa injuria*, or extreme injustice.

All pardonable offences are distinguished by the title of "*crimina læsæ majestatis*—sins against the king:" all unpardonable offences are distinguished by the title of "*crimina læsæ libertatis*—sins against the constitution." In the first case, the injury is
presumed

presumed to extend no further than to one or a few individuals; in the second, it is charged as a sin against the public, against the collective body of the whole people. Of the latter kind are nuisances that may endanger the lives of travellers on the highway; but more capitally, any imagination, proved by avert-act or evil advice, tending to change the nature or form of any one of the three estates; or tending to vest the government, or the administration thereof, in any one, or any two of the said estates, independent of the other; or tending to raise standing armies, or to continue them in time of peace without the consent of parliament; or tending to give any foreign state an advantage over these realms by sea or by land, &c.

The king hath also annexed to his dignity many further very important powers and prerogatives; though they do not so intimately interfere with the constitution, as the capital prerogatives above recited.

He is first considered as the original proprietor of all the lands in these kingdoms; and he founds this claim, as well on the conquest by William the Norman, as by the limited kings or leaders of our Gothic ancestors.

Hence it comes to pass, that all lands, to which no subject can prove a title, are supposed to be in their original owner; and are therefore, by the constitution, vested in the crown. On the same principle, also, the king is intitled to the lands of all persons who die without heirs; as also to the possessions of all who are convicted of crimes subversive of the constitution or public-weal.

His person, while he is king or inclusive of the first estate, is constitutionally sacred, and exempted from all acts of violence or constraint. As one of the estates, also, he is constituted a corporation, and his Teste-Meipso, or written testimony, amounts to a matter of record. He also exercises,

at

at present, the independent province of supplying members to the second estate, by new creation; a very large accession to his original powers. Bishops also are now appointed and nominated by the king, another considerable addition to the royal prerogative. His is the sole prerogative to coin or impress money, and to specify, change, or determine the current value thereof: and for this purpose he is supposed to have reserved, from this original grants of lands, a property in mines of gold and silver, which are therefore called royal-ties.

As he is one of the three constitutional estates, no action can lie against him in any court; neither can he be barred of his title by length of time or entry. And these illustrations of his dignity cast rays of answerable privileges on his royal consort, heir-apparent and eldest daughter.

The king hath also some other inferior and conditional powers, such as of instituting fairs and markets; and of issuing patents for special or personal purposes, provided they shall not be found to infringe on the rights of others. He is also entrusted with the guardianship of the persons and possessions of idiots and lunatics, without account.

I leave his majesty's prerogative of a negative voice in the legislature; as also his prerogative (or rather duty) frequently to call the two other estates to parliament, and duly to continue, prorogue, and dissolve the same; till I come to speak of the three estates, when in such parliament assembled.

Here then we find, that a king of Great Britain is, constitutionally, invested with every power that can possibly be exerted in acts of beneficence. And that, while he continues to move within the sphere of his benign appointment, he continues to be constituted the most worthy, most mighty, and most glorious representative of Omnipotence upon earth.

In treating of the second and third estate, I come naturally to consider what those restraints are, which, while they are preserved inviolate, have so happy a tendency to the mutual prosperity of prince and people.

The ARISTOCRATICAL, or SECOND ESTATE.

THE Nobility, or second estate, in the constitution of Great Britain, is originally representative. The members were ennobled by tenure, and not by writ or patent; and they were holden in service, to the crown and kingdom, for the respective provinces, counties, or baronies, whose name they bore, and which they represented.

A title to be a member of this second estate, was from the beginning hereditary: the king could not anciently either create or defeat a title to nobility. Their titles were not forfeitable, save by the judgments of their peers upon legal trial; and when any were so deprived, or happened to die without heirs, the succession was deemed too important to be otherwise filled, than by the concurrence of the three estates, by the joint and solemn act of the *Parliament*, or *Commune Concilium Regni*.

These truths are attested by many ancient records and parliamentary acts. And, although this most highly ennobling custom was, at particular times, infringed by particular tyrants; it was inviolably adhered to by the best of our English kings;

kings; and was observed even by the worst, excepting a few instances, till the reign of Henry VII. who wished to give consequence to the third estate, by deducting from the honours and powers of the second.

In truth, it is not to be wondered that any kings, who were ambitious of extending their own power, should wish to break and weaken that of the nobility, who had distinguished themselves, by so many glorious stands, for the maintenance of liberty and the constitution, more particularly during the reigns of John, Henry III. the second Edward, and second Richard.

Till Harry VII. the nobles were looked upon as so many pillars whereon the people rested their rights. Accordingly we find that, in the coalition or grand compact between John and the collective body of the nation, the king and people jointly agree to confide to the nobles, the superintendence of the execution of the great charter, with authority to them and their successors, to enforce the due performance of the covenants therein comprised.

What an illustrating distinction must it have been, when patriot-excellence alone (approved before the country in the field or the council) could give a claim to nobility, and compel, as it were, the united estates of king, lords, and commons, to call a man up to a second seat in the government and steerage of the nation.

Such a preference must have proved an unremitting incitement to the cultivation and exercise of every virtue; and to such exertions, achievements, and acts of public beneficence, as should draw a man forth to so shining a point of light, and set him like a gem in the gold of the constitution.

The crown did not, at once, assume the independent right of conferring nobility. Henry III.
first

first omitted to call some of the barons to parliament who were personally obnoxious to him, and he issued his writs or written letters to some others who were not barons, but from whom he expected greater conformity to arbitrary measures. These writs, however, did not ennoble the party till he was admitted, by the second estate, to a seat in parliament; neither was such nobility, by writ, hereditary.

To supply these defects, the arbitrary ministry of Richard II. invented the method of ennobling by letters patent, at the king's pleasure, whether for years, or for life, or in special or general tail, or in fee-simple to a man and his heirs at large. This prerogative, however, was thereafter, in many instances, declined and discontinued, more particularly by the constitutional king Harry the Vth, till meeting with no opposition from the other two estates, it has successively descended, from Henry VII. on nine crowned heads, through a prescription of near a century and a half.

Next to the king, the people have allowed to their peerage, several privileges of the most uncommon and illustrious distinction. Their Christian names, and the names that descended to them from their ancestors are absorbed by the name from whence they take their title of honour, and by this they make their signature in all letters and deeds. Every temporal peer of the realm is deemed a kinsman to the crown. Their deposition on their honour is admitted in place of their oath, save where they personally present themselves as witnesses of facts; and saving their oaths of allegiance, supremacy, and abjuration. Their persons are at all times exempted from arrests, except in criminal cases. A defamation of their character is highly punishable, however true the facts may be, and deserving of censure. During session of parliament, all actions and suits at law against peers are suspended.

pended. In presentments or indictments by grand juries, and on impeachments by the house of commons, peers are to be tried by their peers alone; for in all criminal cases, they are privileged from the jurisdiction of inferior courts, excepting on appeals for murder or robbery. Peers are also exempted from serving on inquests. And, in all civil cases, where a peer is plaintiff, there must be two or more knights impanelled on the jury.

The bishops, or spiritual lords, have privilege of parliament, but have not the above privileges of personal nobility. In all criminal cases, saving attainder and impeachment, they are to be tried by a petit jury. Moreover bishops do not vote, in the house of lords, on the trial of any person for a capital crime.

All the temporal and spiritual nobles that compose the house of lords, however different in their titles and degrees of nobility, are called peers (pares) or equals; because their voices are admitted as of equal value, and that the vote of a bishop or baron shall be equivalent to that of an archbishop or duke.

The capital privilege (or rather prerogative) of the house of peers consists in their being the supreme court of judicature, to whom the final decision of all civil causes are confided and referred, in the last resort.

This constitutional privilege is a weighty counterpoise to his majesty's second prerogative of appointing the administrators of justice throughout the nation; forasmuch as judges (who are immediately under the influence of the crown) are yet intimidated from infringing, by any sentence, on the laws or constitution of these realms, while a judgment so highly superior to their own impends.

The second great privilege of the house of peers consists in their having the sole judicature of all impeachments commenced and prosecuted by the commons.

commons. And this again, is a very weighty counterpoise to his majesty's third prerogative of the executive government of these nations by his ministers, since no minister can be so great, as not justly to dread the coming under a judgment, from which the mightiness of his royal master cannot protect him.

The third capital privilege of the house of peers subsists in their share, or particular department of rights, in the legislature. This extends to the framing of any bills, at their pleasure, for the purposes of good government; saving always to the commons their incommunicable right of granting taxes or subsidies to be levied on their constituents. But, on such bills, as on all others, the house of lords have a negative; a happy counterpoise to the power both of king and commons, should demands on the one part, or bounties on the other, exceed what is requisite.

The change of the ancient Modus, in conferring nobility, has not hitherto, as I trust, been of any considerable detriment to the weal of the people. But should some future majesty, or rather some future ministry, entitle folk to a voice in the second estate, on any consideration, save that of eminent virtue and patriot-service; might it be possible that such ministers should take a further stride, and confer nobility for actions deserving of infamy; should they even covenant to grant such honours and dignities, in lieu of services subversive of the constitution; a majority of such a peerage must either prove too light to effect any public benefit, or heavy enough to effect the public perdition.

THE DEMOCRATICAL, OR THIRD ESTATE.

THE ELECTION of commoners, to be immediate trustees and apt representatives of the people in parliament, is the hereditary and indefeasible privilege of the people. It is the privilege which they accepted, and which they retain, in exchange of their original inherent and hereditary right of sitting with the king and peers IN PERSON, for the guardianship of their own liberties, and the institution of their own laws.

Such representatives, therefore, can never have it in their power to give, delegate, or extinguish the whole or any part of the people's inseparable and unextinguishable share in the legislative power; neither to impart the same to any one of the other estates, or to any persons or person whatever, either in or out of parliament. Where plenipotentiaries take upon them to abolish the authority of their own principles; or where any secondary agents attempt to defeat the power of their primaries; such agents and plenipotentiaries defeat their own commission, and all the powers of the trust necessarily revert to the constituents.

The persons of these temporary trustees of the people, during their session, and for fourteen days before and after every meeting, adjournment, prorogation, and dissolution of parliament, are equally exempted, with the persons of peers, from arrests and dures of every sort.

They are also, during their session, to have ready access to the king or house of lords, and to address or confer with them on all occasions.

No member of the house of commons no more than of the house of peers, shall suffer, or be questioned,

oned, or compelled to witness or answer, in any court or place whatsoever, touching any thing said or done by himself or others in parliament; in order that perfect freedom of speech and action may leave nothing undone for the public weal.

They have also, during session, an equal power with the house of lords, to punish any who shall presume to traduce their dignity, or detract from the rights or privileges of any member of the house.

The commons form a court of judicature, distinct from the judicature of the house of lords. Theirs is the peculiar privilege to try and adjudge the legality of the election of their own members. They may fine and confine their own members, as well as others, for delinquency or offence against the honour of their house. But in all other matters of judicature, they are merely a court of inquisition and presentment, and not a tribunal of definitive judgment.

In this respect, however, they are extremely formidable. They constitute the grand inquest of the nation; for which great and good purpose they are supposed to be perfectly qualified by a personal knowledge of what hath been transacted throughout the several shires, cities, and boroughs, from whence they assemble, and which they represent.

Over and above their inquiry into all public grievances, wicked ministers, transgressing magistrates, corrupt judges and justiciaries, who sell, deny, or delay justice; evil counsellors of the crown, who attempt or devise the subversion or alteration of any part of the constitution; with all such overgrown malefactors as are deemed above the reach of inferior courts; come under the particular cognizance of the commons to be by them impeached, and presented for trial at the bar of the house of lords. And these inquisitory and judicial powers of the two houses, from which no man under the crown can be exempted,

exempted, are deemed a sufficient allay and counterpoise to the whole executive power of the king, by his ministers.

The legislative department of the power of the commons is in all respects co-equal with that of the peers. They frame any bills at pleasure for the purposes of good government. They exercise a right, as the lords also do, to propose and bring in bills, for the amendment or repeal of old laws, as well as for the ordaining or institution of new ones. And each house, alike, hath a negative on all bills that are framed and passed by the other.

But the capital, the incommunicable, privilege of the house of commons, arises from that holy trust which their constituents repose in them; whereby they are impowered to borrow from the people a small portion of their property, in order to restore it, threefold in the advantages of peace, equal government, and the encouragement of trade, industry, and the manufactures.

To impart any of this trust, would be a breach of the constitution; and even to abuse it, would be a felonious breach of common honesty.

By this fundamental trust, and incommunicable privilege, the commons have the sole power over the money of the people; to grant or deny aids, according as they shall judge them either requisite or unnecessary to the public service. Theirs is the province, and theirs alone, to inquire and judge of the several occasions for which such aids may be required, and to measure and appropriate the sums to their respective uses. Theirs also is the sole province of framing all bills or laws for the imposing of any taxes, and of appointing the means of levying the same upon the people. Neither may the first or second estate, either king or peerage, propound or do any thing relating to these matters, that may any way interfere with the proceedings of the commons; save in their negative or assent to such bills,

bills, when presented to them, without addition, deduction, or alteration of any kind.

After such like aids and taxes have been levied and disposed of, the commons have the further right of inquiring and examining into the application of said aids; of ordering all accounts relative thereto to be laid before them; and of censuring the abuse or misapplication thereof.

The royal assent to all other bills is expressed by the terms, "Le roy le veut——the king wills it:" but when the commons present their bills of aid to his majesty, it is answered, "Le roy remer-cier ses loyal subjects, et ainsi le veut——the king thanks his loyal subjects, and so willeth." An express acknowledgment, that the right of granting or levying monies, for public purposes, lies solely, inherently, and incommunicably, in the people, and their representatives.

This capital privilege of the commons constitutes the grand counterpoise to the king's principal prerogative of making peace or war; for, how important must a warlike enterprise prove, without money, which makes the sinews thereof! And thus the people and their representatives still retain in their hands the *grand momentum* of the constitution, and of all human affairs.

Distinguished representatives! Happy people! immutably happy, while *worthily represented*.

As the fathers of the several families throughout the kingdom, nearly and tenderly comprize and represent the persons, cares, and concerns, of their respective households; so these adopted fathers immediately represent, and intimately concentrate, the persons and concerns of their respective constituents, and in them the collective body or sum of the nation. And while these fathers continue true to their adopting children, a single stone cannot lapse from the *great fabric of the constitution*.

THE THREE ESTATES IN PARLIAMENT.

WITH the king, lords, and commons, in parliament assembled, the people have deposited their legislative or absolute power, *in trust*, for their whole body; the said king, lords, and commons, when so assembled, being the great representative of the whole nation, as if all the people were then convened in one general assembly.

As the institution, repeal, and amendment of laws, together with the redress of public grievances and offences, are not within the capacity of any of the three estates distinct from the others; the *frequent holding of parliaments* is the vital food, without which the constitution cannot subsist.

The three estates originally, when assembled in parliament, sat together consulting in the open field. Accordingly, at Running Mead, five hundred years ago, king John passed the great charter (as therein is expressed) by the advice of the lords spiritual and temporal, by the advice of several commoners, (by name recited) *et aliorum fidelium*, and of others his faithful people. And, in the twenty-first clause of the said charter, he covenants, that, “for having
“the common council of the kingdom to assess aids,
“he will cause the lords spiritual and temporal to
“be summoned by his writs; and moreover, that
“he will cause the principal commoners, or those
“who held from him in chief, to be generally summoned to said parliaments by his sheriffs and
“bailiffs.”

In the said assemblies, however, the concourse became so great and disorderly, and the contests frequently so high between the several estates, in assertion of their respective prerogatives and privileges;

leges; that they judged it more expedient to sit apart, and separately to exercise the offices of their respective departments.

As there is no man or set of men, no class or corporation, no village or city, throughout the kingdom, that is not represented by these their delegates in parliament; this great body-politic, or representative of the nation, consists, like the body-natural, of a head and several members, which, being endowed with different powers for the exercise of different offices, are yet connected by one main and common interest, and actuated by *one life or spirit of public reason*, called the *laws*.

In all steps of national import, the king is to be conducted by the direction of the parliament, his great national council; a council, on whom it is equally incumbent to consult for the king with whom they are connected, and for the people by whom they are delegated, and whom they represent. Thus the king is, constitutionally, to be guided by the sense of the parliament, and the parliament alike is, constitutionally, to be guided by the general sense of the people. The two estates in parliament are the constituents of the king; and the people, mediately or immediately, are the constituents of the two estates in parliament.

Now, while the three estates act distinctly, within their respective departments, they affect and are reciprocally affected by each other. This action and re-action produces that general and systematic controul which, like *conscience*, pervades and superintends the whole, checking and prohibiting evil from every part of the constitution. And, from this confinement of every part to the rule of *right reason*, ariseth the great *law of liberty to all*.

For instance: the king has the sole prerogative of making war, &c. But then the means are in the hands of the people, and their representatives.

Again :

Again : to the king is committed the whole executive power. But then the ministers of that power are accountable to a tribunal, from which a criminal has no appeal or deliverance to look for.

Again : to the king is committed the cognisance of all causes. But, should his judges or justiciaries pervert the rule of righteousness, an inquisition, impeachment, and trial impends, from whose judgment the judges cannot be exempted.

Again : the king hath a negative upon all bills, whereby his own prerogatives are guarded from invasion. But, should he refuse the royal assent to bills tending to the general good of the subject, the commons can also withhold their bills of assessment, or annex the rejected bills to their bill of aids ; and they never failed to pass in such agreeable company.

Lastly : to the king is committed the right of calling the two estates to parliament. But should he refuse so to call them, such a refusal would be deemed " an abdication of the constitution ;" and no one need be told, at this day, that " an abdication of the constitution is *an abdication of the throne.*"

Thus, while the king acts in consent with the parliament and his people, he is limitless, irresistible, omnipotent upon earth ; he is the free wielder of all the powers of a free and noble people, a king throned over all the kings of the children of men. But should he attempt to break bounds, should he cast for independence ; he finds himself hedged in and straitened on every side ; he finds himself abandoned by all his powers, and justly left to a state of utter impotence and inaction.

Hence is imputed to the sovereign head, in the constitution of Great Britain, the high and divine attribute, *the king can do no wrong* ; for he is so circumscribed

circumscribed from the possibility of transgression, that no wrong can be permitted to any king in the constitution.

While the king is thus controuled by the lords and the commons; while the lords are thus controuled by the commons and the king; and while the commons are thus controuled by the other two estates, from attempting any thing to the prejudice of the general welfare; the three estates may be aptly compared to three pillars, divided below at equi-distant angles, but united and supported at top, merely by the bearing of each pillar against the others. Take but any one of these pillars away, and the other two must inevitably tumble. But while all act on each other, all are equally counter-acted, and thereby affirm and establish the general frame.

How deplorable then would it be, should this elaborate structure of our happy constitution, within the short period of a thousand years hence, possibly in half the time, fall a prey to effeminacy, pusillanimity, venality, and seduction; like some ancient oak, the lord of the forest, to a pack of vile worms that lay gnawing at the root; or like Egypt, be contemptibly destroyed "by lice and locusts!"

Should the morals of our constituents ever come to be debauched; consent, which is the salt of liberty, would then be corrupted, and no salt might be found wherewith it could be seasoned. Those who are inwardly the servants of sin, must be outwardly the servants of influence. Each man would then be as the Trojan horse of old, and carry the enemies of his country within his bosom. Our own appetites would then induce us to betray our own interests; and state policy would seize us by the hand of our lusts, and lead us "a willing sacrifice to our own perdition."

Should it ever come to pass, that corruption, like a dark and low hung mist, should spread from
man

man to man, and cover these lands : should a general dissolution of manners prevail : should vice be countenanced and communicated by the leaders of fashion : should it come to be propagated by ministers among legislators, and by the legislators among their constituents : should guilt lift up its head without fear of reproach, and avow itself in the face of the sun, and laugh virtue out of countenance by force of numbers : should public duty turn public strumpet : should shops come to be advertised, where men may dispose of their honour and honesty at so much per ell : should public markets be opened for the purchase of consciences, with an " O yes ! We bid most to those who set themselves, their trust, and their country, to sale :"—If such a day, I say, should ever arrive, it would be doomsday, indeed, to the virtue, to the liberty, and constitution of these kingdoms ! It would be the same to Great Britain, as it would happen to the universe, should the laws of cohesion cease to operate, and all the parts be dissipated, whose orderly connection now forms the beauty and common wealth of nature.—Want of sanity in the materials can never be supplied by any art in the building——A constitution of public freemen can never consist of private constitutes.

C H A P. XVII.

THE HISTORY OF A REPROBATE.

I KNOW not, Gentlemen, said he, who my parents were. I was found, when an infant, wrapped in rags on a cobbler's bulk, in Westminster. The parish-officers sent me to the poor-house; and when I was capable of instruction, they sent me to the charity-school.

When I had learned to read and write, I was bound, for a servant, to Mr. Skinner, a neighbouring attorney. My mistress grew fond of me; she was a very holy woman; she taught me my prayers and catechism, and made me read to her every night, and repeat chapters and psalms, till I had nearly got half the Bible by rote.

As my master used to send me on many errands and messages, and to entrust me with little matters of money on such occasions, on finding me always punctual and honest to him, he began to love me almost as much as my good mistress did.

But now came on my first falling away from all goodness. I was about twelve years old, when, in a cursed hour, my master sent me to a distant part of the town, with a bill to pay some money, and bring to him back the change. The change amounted to about four pounds in glittering silver. It appeared a mint of money. I never had been in possession of so large a heap; and I sighed, and said to myself, How blessed must they be who are become the rich owners of so much money! Then some one seemed to whisper me, that I was the owner; and again some one seemed to whisper me, that

that I was not the owner. Then I would go forward toward my master ; and again I would stop and go aside. Then I would thrust my hand into my pocket, and feel the greatness of my treasure, then turn to the wall, and lay the brightness of it before my eyes. Then I would run a piece off, as hurried away by the force of the temptation ; and again I would delay, and stop, and turn, and strive to force myself homeward. Till, what with doubting and delaying, and struggling off and on, and going backward and forward, I considered, that if I went home, I should now get nothing but blame and beating ; and so I took a head, and ran into the country as fast as my feet could carry me.

As I ran myself out of breath, from time to time, I would look back and look back, and run on and run on, in the thought that my master, or some one from him, was at my heels. But often since, I have reflected, and was persuaded in my mind, that my kind master and mistress had not the least suspicion of me, but rather inquired and sorrowed after me, as being murdered or kidnapped from them ; and this also was, at times, a great grief of heart to me.

When I was quite tired and jaded, and night came on, I turned up to a sorry kind of an inn, or rather alehouse, which I happened to be near. But, as I feared every thing, I had the cunning to conceal my treasure, and taking a penny from my pocket, I begged the woman of the house, for that and charity's sake to give me a little bread and milk, and some hole to lie in.

Having finished my supper, I was shewn to a kind of hovel under the stairs, where, throwing myself on some straw with a piece of a blanket over me, I fell fast as a rock. Awakening however, about midnight, or somewhat after, and seeing all dark about me, and no creature near hand ; I began to tremble greatly ; and then I

wished to say my prayers, but I did not dare to pray; and so I lay sweating and trembling, and trembling and sweating, till the dawning of the day brought some relief to my spirits.

Having breakfasted at the cost of a second penny, I set out, though not with my former speed; for reflecting that I had not my livery on, but a small frock-coat, I was under the less fear of being known. However, I pushed on as well as I was able, wanting still to get as far from danger as possible. And indeed I hoped, by going on still farther and farther, to get away from my own fears and from my own conscience.

O Gentlemen! what misery did I not endure at that season? The trust I had in my treasure began now to abate, the dread of losing it also brought new troubles upon me; peace was banished from within me; and without there was no place whereto I might fly for rest.

On the fifth morning of my travels, having expended what halfpence and small silver I had; I took out half a crown, and offered it to the man of the house, desiring him to return what was over the reckoning. As he took it, he gave me a look that I thought went through me, and continuing to stare me in the face, he shamed me so, that I was constrained to turn aside. He gave me the change, however, and I set forward on my journey, all trembling, and apprehending I knew not what.

I had not gone above a mile, when, meeting a dirty road, I turned over a stile that led to a path through the fields. Here I walked on a little way, when, turning, I saw my landlord making long strides after me; whereupon my heart beat, and my knees grew so weak under me, that I stood as still as a stone.

He came quickly up with me, and seizing me by the neck, he cast me on my back. Ha! you young rogue, says he, let us see what money you have got. Then, diving into my pocket, he pulled
out

out the whole stock in which I trusted for happiness. O, you little dog of a villain, from whom have you stolen all this treasure? But I must go and return it to the right owner. O, good Sir, good Sir, I roared out, will you not leave me a little? ever so little, dear Sir, to keep me from starving? But he was deaf to my cries and prayers, and away he went.

Hope, the last comfort of the miserable, now forsook me. I cursed, at my heart, the day on which I was born; and I lay a long time, as one who had no use for limbs, or any farther way to travel upon earth. At length I broke out into shouts and a great gush of tears, and having got some ease by venting my sorrows, I rose, by a kind of instinct, and went on I knew not whither.

Growing hungry after noon, I would willingly have begged the charity of passengers; but this I did not dare to do, for fear they should ask me whence I came, and who I was, and whereto I was going; questions to which I could give no very honest answer. So I bore my hunger as well as I could, till coming at night to a hovel where a farmer kept his pigs, I made way for myself among them, and slept in the straw till morning.

The day following, as I passed slowly and half famished through a small village, my eye caught at a penny-loaf that lay on a little shop-window which jutted into the street. I looked here and there, and peered into the shop, and was just going to seize the ready and tempting spoil; when something whispered at my heart, Do not touch it for your life, starve, starve rather than offer to steal any more; and so I tore myself away, and running as fast as I could, for fear of turning back, I at last got clear off from the reach of this temptation.

When I had travelled something farther, I got into an inclosed country, where there were hedges on every side, with plenty of haws and bramble-

berries on every bush. And here I filled my belly with berries to serve me for dinner ; and I stuffed my pockets with haws against I should want. Upon this I grew wonderful glad that I had not taken the loaf ; and peace again began to come upon my mind ; and, about night-fall, having reached a copse on one side of the road, I crept like a hare, under the shelter of the bushes ; I then supped upon my haws, after which I kneeled down, and half ventured at a prayer to God ; and gathering up in my form, I slept happily till morning.

Having lived thus for some days, I came into an open country, where there was scarce any path, nor any haw or berry within many a mile. I now began to grow sick and faint with hunger ; and again my sickness went off, and I became so greedy and ravenous, that I was ready to eat my own flesh from the bones. Soon after, I spied, at a distance, a confused heap of something at the root of a great tree that grew in the open fields. I made up to it in expectation of I knew not what ; and found an old beggar-man fast asleep in his patched cloak, with a bundle of somewhat lying beside him.

Instantly I opened his little baggage, when to my inexpressible transport, a large luncheon of brown bread, with some halfpence, struck my eyes. I did not hesitate a moment about seizing the bread ; for I could no more withstand the cravings of my appetite at the time, than I could withstand a torrent rushing down a hill. Having appeased my stomach, I began to demur about what I should do with the remainder of the bread, and felt a motion or two inclining me to leave it behind me. But, “ no, said I to myself ; this is all the bread that I have, or may ever have during life, and I know not where to get a bit in the whole world ; beside, I do this man no harm in taking it away, since I leave him money enough wherewith to buy more.” So I put the bread in my pocket,
and

and went on my way, leaving behind me about four or five pence in the wrapper.

I had not gone far, however, before I said to myself again, "This man is a beggar by trade, and gets "halfpence from every passenger that goes the road. "But alas, no one living has any pity upon me; "and so to starve alive, or take the money, is all "the question." So saying, or so thinking, I went back on tiptoes, and stooping and seizing my prey, I flew away like lightning.

As soon as I had got out of the reach and sight of the poor man, the first motion I felt was the joy of having such a prize; but I had not gone far till this joy was much abated, my sighs began to heave, and my tears to flow apace.

That night, I took up my lodging in a waste hut that lay a little way off the road. But though, as I thought, I had plenty of bread, and money enough about me; yet I found myself exceeding heavy, and I was not able to pray, as I did the foregoing nights.

During all this time, I neither knew where I was, nor whereto I was going, nor any thing more of my travels than that I came from London.—When I had spent to my last penny, and was walking, slow and melancholy, on a by-path that led through some woody lawns, I heard the voice of merriment, and, quickly after, perceived a group of gypsies that came from behind some trees.

As I saw that I could not escape them, I gathered courage, and went forward, when, coming up, they stopped and eyed me with much attention, and made a ring about me. Where are you going, my child? says a man with a broad girdle and a very formidable beard. Indeed, Sir, said I, I cannot tell. And where did you come from then? From London, Sir, so please you. From London, Child? why, that is a very great way off. And pray

pray what made you leave London? To get away from my master. But I hope you did not come away empty, you brought something from him, did not you? Some little matter, good Sir, but I was robbed of it on the way. Hereupon, this venerable regent smiled, and, turning to his dependents, As far as I see, said he, this chap will answer our purpose to a hair.

Here one of the females asked if I was hungry; and on my answer in the affirmative, they all invited me with a jovial air to dinner. We then turned a distance off from the path wherein we had met, and gradually descended into one of the pleasantest spots in the world. It was a dell surrounded with hills, some of which were flanting, some headlong and impending, and all covered or spotted with groups of trees, of different heights, sorts, and colours; through which there descended a gurgling rivulet, which, having rolled over stones and pebbles, grew silent in a small lake, that reflected the circling objects from the hills around.

Immediately nature's carpet was covered with a large cloth of fine damasked linen. The baggage was taken from the shoulders of the bearers; and before I well could observe what they were about, there was spread, as by art-magic, before my eyes, the most various and sumptuous banquet I had ever beheld. Down instantly sunk the guests; some sitting, like the Turks, cross-legged; while others lolled, like the Romans, beside each other.

As they had travelled far that day, they all eat in silence; and, in a short space, the burden of the luggage-carriers was pretty much lightened. In the mean time, some arose, and unladed two asses of the creels which they carried. The cloth then was quickly emptied of the cold fowls and baked meats, with the loins of beef and mutton; and leather-jacks, that contained plenty of the best wines and other liquors, were set before us. These,
again,

again, were decanted into clean japanned pitchers; and a japanned cup, of equal measure, was given into every hand.

Then began mirth and jollity to flow round with the cups; never did I see so pleasant, so gleeful a company. Joke and banter, without offence, were bandied from every side; and bursts of laughter were echoed from the answering hills.

As soon as I was warmed and my heart opened by what I drank, they all expressed a liking and kindness for me, and requested that I would tell them my story, without disguise. Accordingly I made an ingenuous confession of all the matters related. But instead of meeting those reproofs which I expected for my wickedness, they jointly began to ridicule my scruples, and put to shame the little shame I had of my evil-deeds.

My child, said their ancient governor, when you have been a sufficient time with us, you will then learn what it is to be wise and to be happy. You will then know that religion is nothing but hypocrisy or fashion. There are thousands and ten thousands of religions upon earth, all contrary, and fighting the one against the other. People pretend to fear God, when it is the fear of the laws alone that is before their eyes. God is not to be feared, but to be loved, my son, for he is a very gracious and a bountiful God. He gave the heavens, in common, to the birds of the air. He gave the seas, and rivers also, in common to the fishes. And he gave this whole earth in common to mankind. But great people, and people of power, have seized it all to themselves, and they have made to themselves possessions and properties by fences and inclosures; and they have again inclosed these inclosures, by laws of their own making, whereby the poor are to be punished, when they attempt to reclaim any part of the natural rights with which God had gifted them. But when the poor, without fear of the laws, can gain any thing from the rich

rich and the mighty, who have robbed them of their rights, they may surely do it with a safe and an honest conscience. And now know, my child, that you are come among those who, of all people can best defend you and make you happy. We are of that sort of the poor who are above the rich and the mighty, by being above the laws; for they can frame no laws which are of any more force to us than the web of a spider.

So spoke this formidable sage; and indeed, Gentlemen, however strange it may seem, I saw the latter part of his assertion fully verified by practice. I continued among this very singular and wonderful people, near the space of three years; during which time they initiated me into all the arts and mysteries of their manifold iniquities. No fetters could hold them; no prisons could contain them; no bolts or locks could secure the treasure of the wealthy from them. By the means of spells or certain odours, as it were by enchantment, all beasts became subject to them; the wildest horse would stand for them; the fiercest mastiffs did not dare to bay or growl at them; so that all bleaching grounds, yards, and gardens, were as open to their invasion as the high way. They assumed all shapes, and almost all sizes. They became visible and invisible, known or unknown at pleasure; for every different dress they had a different countenance and set of features; so that their daily intimates could not know them, except by appointed words or tokens. And thus, without violence or apparent fraud, without bustle, indictment, or accusation on any side, they over-ruled the government, and held, as it were, the purses of the whole nation in their hands.

You will wonder, Gentlemen, by what policy these people could maintain their influence and depredations,

predations, undetected, throughout the kingdom. I will account for this matter as clearly, and as briefly as I can.

Though they never appeared by day, except single, or in small parties of ten or fifteen at most, yet they kept their state entire, by quick and constant intelligence. Beside their prince, or principal potentate, who was the person that first accosted me, they had a deputy governor for every shire; and, at convenient distances, houses of common resort for the fraternity. Here their victuals were dressed and their provisions laid in; and here also were deposited the spoils of the public, which, when converted into money, was locked in a strong box, one tenth for the use of the society on any emergence, and the other nine for the benefit of the spoilers, in proportion to their respective ranks and merits.

Before we rose from our late-mentioned festival, an ancient female fortune-teller chucked me under the chin, and said, Do you know, my dear, where this same kind landlord lives, who robbed you of your money? All I know, said I, is, that he lives in a little town, at the sign of a white cross, and near to a great windmill. What, cried one of the men, my old host Jerry Gruff? He hates that any except himself should prosper by their ingenuity. I owe that fellow a fling, cried another, for once attempting to circumvent me in his own house. Well, my lad, says Geoffry the old governor, his house lies directly in the way of our circuit; and, for your encouragement, I promise you that he shall refund you every penny of the money he took from you.

The luggage being now up, we went back on the field path by which I came; and coming to a great road, we divided into small parties, who were appointed to meet at the rendezvous, where

we supped merrily, and slept soundly for that night.

We set out, the next morning, by dawn of day, and entering soon after upon a common, we saw a parcel of horses feeding without a keeper. Immediately three of the likeliest were taken from the rest. Out came scissars, and other implements, with phials of colouring essences, and to work went many hands, when, in less than five minutes, had the owners come up, they could not have found a single mark of their own property upon them. And indeed I have frequently known some of those my ingenious brotherhood, so very audacious as to sell, in public market, the cattle which they had stolen, to the very persons from whom they were taken.

As these people were never unprovided of their conveniencies, the horses were quickly bridled and dispatched, by several emissaries, several ways, to summon the neighbouring brotherhood, on the third night, to meet near the white cross with their appointed apparatus.

Accordingly, on the evening of the night required, we arrived on a little hill that stood opposite to the house of my conscientious landlord ; and, soon after, we were joined by several parties, from several sides, amounting to about a hundred and twenty persons, with parcels of I knew not what upon asses, &c.

The packs were quickly opened, and from thence were produced black and flame-coloured gowns, flambeaux, hoofs, and horns, and vizards of horrid aspect and terrific dimension. In a hurry, we were all fitted with our respective dresses and characters. A large pasteboard coffin was covered with a white sheet, and exalted upon the shoulders of four fiery devils ; and, as night began to fall dark and heavy upon us, a light was struck, the flams were lighted, one was put into every right hand ; speaking-trumpets,

trumpets, with other instruments of heart-sinking sounds, were put to many a mouth, and we directly set out on our diabolical proceſſion. Some roared like bulls, others howled and bayed like dogs at a midnight moon, while others yelled articulately in the caterwauling gibberish; in ſhort, the ſounds made ſuch a complication of horrors as no mortal ears could abide, nor mortal courage ſupport.

Mean while the town took the alarm, and began to be in commotion. Old and young quitted their houſes and hurried hither and thither through the ſtreet. But as we advanced, they made backward; and running, or climbing, or scrambling up the hill, they gathered all in a body before the wind-mill. In the interim, we pushed forward, and entered the inn, where neither cat nor dog, nor living creature was left, ſave Goodman Gruff, who lay impotent of the gout, in an upper chamber.

While moſt of the company ſtaid routing and ſearching the houſe below, Signior Geoffry led a few of us up ſtairs. He repreſented the perſon of Lucifer, whoſe name was impreſſed in flaming characters on his cap. On entering the room where landlord Gruff lay, Hark ye, Jerry, ſays Lucifer, you ſneaking thief, you mean petty-larceny villain! how came you to rob a child, the other day, of the money which he gained under my influence and encouragement? I have a mind, you ſcoundrel, to ſtrike you out of my liſt of inn-keepers. O, my good Lord Lucifer, cries Gruff, with a trembling voice, in my conſcience, now, I did not think that any kind of robbery would be an offence to your honour. You lie, you rascal, you lie, cries Lucifer, the devil is a gentleman, he loves thoſe who rob the great, who have robbed the little; but he hates your low-spirited ſcoundrels who rob the widow and the fatherleſs, and take
from

from the little ones the little that they have. Why, pray, my Lord Lucifer, are you a Christian? cries Gruff. A better one, rascal, than you or any of your tribe; for though I tremble, yet I believe. And I tell thee, Jerry, that I will make this generation to tremble; but, as I think, the devil himself cannot bring them to believe.

During this confabulation, the whole house, drawers and all, was gutted as clean as a fowl for supper. So, without entering into any other habitation, away we marched, as in our former tremendous procession; till, coming to some standing water, we halted, and at a given word, we all together plunged our torches into the pool, and instant night fell upon all the world.

Thus, from day to day, and year to year, while I continued with this people, I was witness to a variety of sleights, deceits, impostures, metamorphoses, and depredations, without any instance of their being brought to condign punishment. One of them, however, within my time, was detected, taken, imprisoned, brought to the bar, tried, and brought in guilty; and yet found means to evade justice by the most marvellous piece of stratagem that ever was.

He was spied in the act of stealing a bay horse. Fresh suit was made. He was seized, and loaded with irons in the dungeon of the county-gaol. On the day of trial the fact was proved by incontestable witnesses; and the jury, without quitting the box, pronounced the fatal word *Guilty*. Have you any thing to say, cried the judge, why sentence of death should not be pronounced against you? I can truly affirm, exclaimed the culprit, that I am as clear as the light of this matter; that the beast which I took, then was, and, to this hour, is my own property; and that there must be some wonderful mistake in this business; wherefore, my Lord, as I am upon life and death, I trust that your charitable
indulgence

indulgence will order this same horse to be brought into court. The horse accordingly was brought, and the culprit continued; Now, my lord, be pleased to order the witnesses to say whether this be the same horse that I stole or not? The same, the same, cried the witnesses, by virtue of our oaths. Be so good then, my Lord, to ask them of what age this horse was, at the time that I stole him? By virtue of the same oath, four years old, rising five. Now, my Lord, if you will continue your gracious indulgence, be pleased to order his mouth to be examined by some people skilled in such matters. This also was done by two or three jockeys of acknowledged judgment, who instantly cried out, Why, my Lord, this horse is quite passed mark of mouth.

Hereupon every person that was present looked astonished, and silence was in court for some minutes; till the culprit resumed. There is but one question more with which I shall trouble your Lordship, it is, that you would be pleased to send and examine whether this same horse be a horse or mare. This lastly, was done, when the examiners cried out, A mare, my Lord, a mare, without any question!

Here the surprise and amazement of the court was redoubled. The jury looked down abashed; the witnesses slunk away in utter shame and confusion; and his lordship ordered, instantly that the prisoner should be dismissed without fees, and that the mare should be restored to him as his proper goods.

Now, the whole mystery of the affair was merely this, that some of the fraternity, the very night before the trial, had picked the lock of the stable, and in the place of the horse had substituted this mare, which they found or formed to so perfect a resemblance of him, that no eye could discern the smallest distinction.

During

During my sojourn with these wretches, may it please your Honours, I found by dear experience, that between the birth and the grave, there are but two sorts of happiness of which man is capable. The one is, that of a "conscience void of giving offence;" the other is, that of a "conscience that cannot be offended." I was therefore perpetually miserable, because neither the one nor the other was my state: for, on the one hand, I was conscious that I gave daily offence to God and man; and, on the other hand, my conscience was daily offended thereby. I was merry, indeed, though not happy, when in company, but ever dejected when left alone; so that during my three years incorporation with this fraternity, I never once lifted my heart in any appeal to God, nor ventured to petition for any kind of favour from him.

Though these reprobates, as I have intimated, continued to perpetrate, and to glory, with a merry and satisfied conscience, in their daily iniquities; yet hitherto they had not proceeded to blood.

On the night wherein I left them, we were overtaken, and cut short of our intended rest, by a sudden and violent tempest of wind and hail, whereupon we took shelter in a waste barn.

When we had struck a light, we set together what straw and combustibles we could find in the house, and had just kindled a fire, when one of the company came and whispered that there was a man asleep in the far corner. Hereupon they took the candle, and with soft and cautious steps, found a pedlar stretched along, with his head on a wisp of straw, and his box close beside him. They immediately lifted the box, and brought it away, in silence, to the place where I was sitting. On opening it, with as little noise as possible, they found therein a large quantity of silks, linens, and laces, with a rich variety of hardwares, and at the
bottom,

bottom, a little padlocked chest, full of English and Spanish pieces of gold; in all likelihood the whole amount of the labours of his life.

This was a prize not to be thrown down the stream. Immediately all was in a kind of under-breathing bustle, and whispering commotion. The great question was, how to possess themselves of such a prey with safety to their persons. It was objected, that the man might waken, they were unluckily seen coming that way, and, it may be, entering into that house; the country might be alarmed, and rise upon them; they might be overtaken; they might be seized in the very fact.

At length a bold villain proposed directly to cut his throat, and that then there could be no witness to testify against them; but to this it was again objected, that the blood itself would be the fear-fullest and surest of all witnesses. Whereupon another proposed to suffocate or strangle him, and bury his corpse on the spot; to which scheme, though many were silent, yet no one expressly excepted.

During this deadly consultation, notwithstanding my long course of evil habit, and evil example, my blood curdled throughout my body, and fear, horror, and detestation arose in my bosom. But when they went, as I supposed, to put the deed of death into instant execution, I crouched and shrunk inward; and creeping out at the door, the dread of being also seized and murdered, gave me strength to get on my feet; and feeling along by the wall, I got away from the house, and made off. I neither knew nor cared whither.

The tempest still continued; the driving of the clouds added to the natural horrors of night; I could scarcely discern that I had a road under my foot. But though I could not see my pursuers, I yet feared that their eyes were better than mine; and

and I still turned and listened, to try if the foot of the murderer was behind me.

Having travelled all night as fast and far as I could from the scene of my terrors, on the rising of the day I saw a large town before me, and, for the first time of three years, I lifted up my eyes, and inwardly blessed God for his mercy in my escape from so great a wickedness. Thereupon I felt a pleasure that I had never felt before; and I said in my heart, If you will once more be my God, I will be your true servant, and will never offend or transgress any more.

I then walked on leisurely; my fatigue went from me, and I seemed quite lightsome to myself. On entering the suburbs, I met a gentleman taking his morning's walk out of town. I stopped and looked him wistfully in the face, whereupon he also stopped, and eyed me with much attention. Who are you, my pretty lad? says he. An unhappy stranger, Sir, who wants a service, or any means of earning a little honest bread. And pray what service can you do? Not much, Sir, I fear, but my good-will shall strive hard to make up my lack of ability. Then, cried he, you shall be my servant. All the servants I ever had, promised every thing, but did little: I will now try what may be done by one who promises nothing. What is your name, my boy? David Doubtful, Sir! for that was my true name, though I had gone by several others. And what wages must I give you, David? Just as much, Sir, or as little as you shall please to think I deserve.

Here he took me to a handsome house, where he kept a mercer's shop in Plymouth. His name was Felton; he had been a widower for some years, and had an only son, who was then at Westminster-school in London.

My master, at first, set me to the most servile and vile offices, such as cleaning his and the servants

vants shoes; sweeping the street before his door, and carrying out the dirt of the house; but all this I did with willingness, and even with pleasure, as some little matter of penance for my long course of evil-deeds.

On my separating from my brethren in iniquity, as I have told you, I was the proprietor of one hundred and seventy odd pounds, which was locked up in the common chest, being my allotted dividend of the fruits of our knavery, for three successive years; but in my present turn of mind, I would no more have accepted any part thereof, than I would have taken a bar of red-hot iron into my hand. I had also in my pocket, a few crowns with some smaller silver; but these I secretly distributed among the poor, that no part, as it were, of Achan's accursed thing might remain about me.

In about three weeks, my master again changed the whole manner of my service, and set me to brush his cloaths, dress his wigs, whet his knives, lay the cloth, and attend at table; but these were matters in which I was quite expert, as I had not yet forgotten my employment with my first master.

In some time after, Mr. Felton asked me if I could read? A little in the Bible, Sir, said I. And can you write too, David? If you please I will try, Sir. Why, David! this beats the hand of my clerk; where in the world did you come by all this learning! From a very good master to a very bad servant. But pray, Sir, do not enquire the particulars of my naughtiness; for, indeed, you could not desire a severer monitor than my own conscience is to me. Well, my child, said the good man, I will not put you to pain; and, so giving me a squeeze by the hand, he went out with a glistening eye.

From this time my master shewed an uncommon respect and attention to me. He discharged me from all the menial offices of his household; he
gave

gave me his burdens of silks and other wares, to carry to his several customers; and he desired me to take particular notice of the natures and values of what I carried.

On this encouragement, I became vastly more apprehensive and assiduous than he looked for. I attended the shop closely, and took notice and private notes of all that was estimated or transacted therein. My master looked quite amazed, on asking me some questions with respect to his affairs. His eldest apprentice, soon after, set up for himself. He then placed me behind the counter, over his younger apprentice, and in joint authority with his journeyman. And, soon after, he gave me the key of his till, and the trust of all his treasure. I now dined with him at the same table, and consulted and conversed with him as his friend and companion. He frequently gave me pocket-money, which, he told me, he would not charge to the account of my wages. I walked with him every evening, went to church with him every Sunday, and read to him in the Bible every night. I was now wholly reconciled to my God, and felt him in my soul as a friend and benefactor. Pleasure played about my heart, peace lay under my pillow; and my happiness seemed as a ship that, after a long and desperate voyage, had anchored in a calm and secure haven.

I had now been something upward of a year in the service of Mr. Felton, when one day I heard a bustling noise in the street, and saw people running hither and thither across the window. I stepped to the door, and looking to the left, saw a great crowd about a cart, wherein were five criminals going to execution. I staid till they came just opposite to me, when, to my utter astonishment and terror, I saw five of my old acquaintance, and, in the front of them, the bloody villain who had proposed cutting the throat of the unfortunate pedlar. Instantly
I turned

I turned all pale as my shirt, and dreading that they would know and claim acquaintance with me, I shrunk in, and running backward, threw myself half fainting into a chair.

I now reflected, that it was happy for me no one was in the shop to take notice of my confusion; and endeavouring to assume some courage, on the entrance of our journeyman, I put on the most unconcerned appearance that I could.

Mr. Felton happened to dine abroad that day, and did not return till the cloth was laid for supper. He took his chair at table, and desired me to sit beside him. David, said he, is it not wonderful that people should continue so incredulous, notwithstanding the frequent and daily proofs of an all-seeing and an all-detecting Providence? If a sparrow falls not to the ground without the notice of our God, how much more will he take account of the life of him whom he formed in his own image? The villain trusts to hide his villainy, and dares to affirm (with the first murderer) in the face of God and of man, "I know not where is my brother." But blood has a voice, a crying voice, David; it cries aloud to heaven, from the very bowels of the earth. No depth can cover it, no darkness can conceal it, for the light that shineth in darkness will bring it forth to day.

About twelve months ago, a pedlar was murdered in a waste house called Fielding's barn. The murderers were of the people whom they call *Gipsies*, the most subtle and evasive of all sorts of reprobates, so that the fact lay a long time in silence. This pedlar, it seems, had an only brother, to whom the reversion of his substance belonged; and his brother, not seeing or hearing from him of a long time, went through the whole country, and through many parts of the kingdom, inquiring after him. At length he arrived, one evening, at an inn some miles from hence, where he found in the kitchen,

kitchen, seven men jovially seated over a bowl of punch; he quickly accepted their invitation, and having spent the time pleasantly, and the house being thronged, he, and one of the company, were shewn to the same bed.

About midnight his companion began to moan most piteously, when, jogging and asking him why he groaned? O, Fielding's barn! he cried, Fielding's barn! Fielding's barn! Again, he cried, You cannot say it; you cannot say that my hand was in the murder. Again, he would mutter, with a half-smothered voice, See, see, how, how he struggles, see how he kicks; put, put him out of pain, O put him out of pain!

Hereupon the brother rose, and dressed as quietly as possible, and making away to the next magistrate, he returned, seized, and carried off his bed-fellow, before any of his comrades were apprised of the matter.

What have you done you villain? said the magistrate without preface; what have done with the body of the pedlar whom you murdered in Fielding's barn? On this question, the wretch, thinking that all was detected, instantly fell on his knees. I had neither hand nor heart in the murder, Sir, he cried; and if you will get me a pardon, I will faithfully tell you the whole affair. On his confession, the five principal rogues were taken before they were out of bed. And on his evidence, and that of their seventh companion, they were sentenced, and this day executed, and are to be gibbeted in the morning.

During this narration, I could not refrain from expressing, by my countenance and gesture, the strong compunction I felt on recollecting my long association with those reprobates; but my good master, as I suppose, ascribed my emotions merely to the detestation which I had of their deeds.

I had

I had been close upon two years in the service of Mr. Felton, and he had lately agreed with me at 25*l.* yearly, whereof he paid me the last year's wages in hand; when one evening as I stood behind the counter, a young woman came in, and desired to see such and such goods. While she was cheapening on the one hand, and I setting forth the extraordinary value on the other, several intelligent glances were exchanged between us. Whenever her eyes met mine, she instantly cast them down with a blushing modesty; and yet whenever I looked at her, I saw that her eyes had been fixed upon me. At length having bought some little matters, she made me a bashful courtesy, and going out at the door, she turned upon me with a significant glance, and departed.

All that night I felt myself as I had never felt before; I turned and turned again from the image of this girl, and yet she seemed to stand before me, and to look upon me, as she had done the day before.

For five tedious days she with-held herself from my sight, and I feared that I should never behold her any more. At length she came, and I strove in vain to conceal my joy on her appearance. After cheapening and paying for some little matters, she cast her eye on a piece of silk, which, she said, she fancied greatly, but feared that her pocket would not reach so far. O Miss! said I, we shall not quarrel for such a matter, provided I know where to call for the money. On Sarah Simper, Sir, said she, at such a sign, in such a row.

As I had three or four spare hours from business every evening, I gladly laid hold of the occasion I had gotten for spending that time in visits to my beloved. I went indeed, without forming any purpose or intention, save the pleasure of seeing her. Her fondness seemed, at least, to equal my own; and though we proceeded at times to toying and dallying,

dallying, yet for three weeks we kept within warrantable limits. But this was not always the case. Our first transgression was succeeded, on her part, by tears and reproaches, and, on mine, by a depth of sorrow and remorse.

As this was my first fault, with respect to woman, my conscience was yet unsteeled. I spent the night in sighs and tears of contrition, and I repeated a thousand promises and vows to my God, that I never would be guilty of the like again.

For five entire days I kept from going to her. At length I considered, that, as I had injured her, I ought to make her such recompence as was in my power. I put about twelve pounds into my pocket, being all that I had left of my last year's salary, and went and told her that I was come to take my leave of her; then, pouring the money into her lap, I promised to give her what I should earn from time to time, and to marry her whenever I should be enabled to maintain a family. Here we both fell into tears, and from tears we proceeded to caresses, and so forth, till at last we became as guilty as we had been before.

In like manner, for the six ensuing weeks, I kept on in a course of repenting and sinning, and of sinning, and again repenting. Every night I formed resolutions which I imagined would be stronger than any I had made before; but whatever force I put on myself, whatever strength I exerted, I never was able to persevere for three days together. When I felt myself drawn to her, as by some irresistible power, I vowed, and flattered myself on the way, that I would return without transgressing; but, when I came to her, I found it quite as impossible to keep from sinning with her, as it was to keep from her. Thus, by frail and falsified vows, I daily continued to add to the heap of my guilt; till at length I became hopeless of any ability to resist

resist temptation, and sinned on with my eyes open, and yet with less remorse than before.

As I was sitting with her one evening, a bailiff entered suddenly, and laid an action upon her for fifteen pounds, which he said, she promised to pay for her mother in her last illness. Whether the debt was feigned, and the caption preconcerted between them, I know not; but I afterward recollected, that she did not seem to be so alarmed, as one would have expected on such an occasion. On the other hand, my soul was filled with bitter and distracting thoughts. I could not think of suffering my love to be confined among fellows in a common prison; and yet how to come by the money, I knew not. I offered the man my note payable when my salary should be due; but he refused to depart without instant payment. Hereupon I hurried home, and taking out 15*l.* of my master's money, I returned and discharged the action.

From this time my fair one began to extend her appetites, and to rise in her passions. Under colour of being with child, her longings and fits came frequent upon her, and I was in a manner constrained to indulge her, till I had taken of my master's money to the amount of fifty pounds.

David, said she one day, it is time to tell you that I must soon quit my mantuamaking business, for I am growing too big to appear with decency among my customers. So you must take other lodgings for me, and provide a sufficient fund to defray the many necessary expences of child-birth. And where, my dearest Sally! may such a fund be provided? I have already gone lengths for you that may bring me to the gallows. If you had not been a poor-spirited fellow, says she, you could not bear to live in the fears that haunt you so; you would long since have made away with that old scoundrel your master. Here, throw this little dust into his
broth,

broth, or his posset, and then you may wallow in money without fear of account.

Here I looked her full in the face, and every beauty that had once enchanted me, suddenly vanished from my sight, and I saw nothing but the dire head of a snaky Medusa. However, I suppressed my horror as well as I could; and putting back the paper, No, no, no, no, Sally, said I, I would rather die the worst of deaths myself, than have a hand in making away with my kind old master. And die you shall then, she cried, for I will not perish alone. She then dropped on her knees, and vowed, with fearful imprecations, that she would go directly to Mr. Felton, and make a discovery of my robberies; that she would also go to the next magistrate, and swear a rape against me; and that she would poison herself, and the bastard within her, that she might not bring into the world any part of such a villain.

While she spoke, her aspect looked livid and deadly, and wrath and desperation flashed in fire from her eyes.

My dear Sally, said I, lower your passions a little, give me that paper again; we shall see what may be done. And here I leave you my watch as a pledge of my return by to-morrow at noon. This I did, however, not with the smallest intention of keeping my promise; for I determined never more to look her in the face. But I bequeathed to her, as it were, the only stake of value which remained to me, that the wretch whom I had ruined might not be left altogether without means of life.

When I got into the street, I hastened homeward, without deliberating a moment on what I was about, or on the consequences that might ensue. My master was in a back chamber, looking over some letters, when I rushed in precipitately, and shut the door behind me. What is the matter, child, says he; are you not well? You look
look

look pale and affrighted; what is the matter, David? O Sir! O Sir! and I sunk upon my knees, I bring to you a villain, a reprobate, a thief, a robber, a betrayer of trusts, also the vilest sinner that ever sinned against God and against man. I got in league with a bad woman who seduced me by her beauty, and then prevailed upon me to defraud and rob you, and would have persuaded me to murder you; but there I stopt short: I could not be prevailed upon to murder you, my master! Pray then, said he somewhat sternly, to what intent are you come? To demand justice, Sir? I cried, and to appease my own conscience by suffering for my faults. Tell me them, said he mildly, and tell me truly, of how much money have you defrauded me? Of fifty pounds, Sir! I answered, a few shillings under or over. Rise then, pray rise, my David! he cried; I would not bring you to shame, and much less to punishment, for five times the value of fifty pounds. I owe you, for your services, very nearly that sum, and I forgive you the remainder with all my heart. No, Sir! I cried aloud, and burst into tears, you do not forgive me, you cannot forgive me, for this your goodness does but heap the heavier guilt upon my soul.

He then got up and came to me, and raising me to his bosom, he embraced me, and cried, I rejoice over thee, my David, I rejoice over thee, my child, as Heaven rejoiceth over the one sinner that repenteth, more than over the ninety and nine that have no need of repentance. You now know your own frailties; you are sensible of your lapses; you will be cautious of future falls; and you stand upon firmer ground than ever.

You know me not, I exclaimed! You know me not, my good master. I am wholly irreclaimable. The devil has taken possession of me, and reigns through all my members. I find it quite in vain to strive or struggle against him. I have no more

strength than a midge against temptation; no more power than a weak and fainting man against a torrent that already has borne him far away.

I will pray for you, my son, said the good man vehemently! I will wrestle with my God for you! and his grace shall be sufficient. No, Sir, I replied, after that which has happened, I never shall be able to look you in the face, I will not trust myself. I know that I should fall on the first trial. Will you leave me then, he cried, will you leave me, my son David? and he took out his handkerchief, and wiped away the falling tear. I must, I answered, I must leave you, my dearest master, I should be miserable if I staid. I will go directly to sea, I will confine myself in some ship, where I shall be shut from any commerce or communication with mankind, and not have it in my reach to wrong or damage any person. And, indeed, I could not bear to stay in one town, or even in one kingdom, with that bad woman. Where may she be found, David? said Mr. Felton. Ah! Sir! I exclaimed, leave her to God, and to her own evil conscience, I beseech you. I believe she is with child by me. Do not desire, my master, to hurt a little innocent that has not yet seen the light! No, my David, no; I mean nothing but comfort to her. I mean to supply her wants, and to soften her distresses. She will not then be tempted to wish hurt to her benefactor, and I will take care of the little wretch which she carries in her body, for your sake, my David.

There was something so affecting, Gentlemen, in such a proof of wonderful goodness, as must have struck to the heart of the most abandoned reprobate. I was quite overcome thereby. I fell suddenly at his feet, and I wished to pour out my very soul, in the same manner as I poured my tears upon them.

As

As he now found that I was bent and determined on departing, David, says he, since you will go, you must not go unprovided. A sailor ought to have proper necessaries; and, if you will give me your company for three or four days longer, I will get you a good birth in some ship or other. Mean time I would advise you to set about your preparations; for which purpose you must accept these fifty guineas, which you may please to return me, when some happy adventure shall furnish you with means. No, no, Sir, I cried, putting his purse back with my hand, your plan is not the plan of your reprobate servant; your good births are not at all for my purpose. I will go as a common sailor; the meanest offices and the greatest drudgery will be a penance too little, much too little, for my transgressions. And, so saying, I turned and went hastily out.

I made directly to the quay, where I saw a crowd of citizens intermixed with sailors. On going up, I found that they were enlisting volunteers, to whom they offered from one to three guineas per man. And what will you give me, Captain, if I go with you? He then looked earnestly at me, and, having eyed me several times, from head to foot, I will give you, my lad, said he, five guineas in your fist, and here is my hand for a hearty welcome into the bargain. If your Honour then will be pleased to order those five pieces to be laid out for me in such necessaries as you think fitting; I live at such a place, and shall be ready at a call. Enough, said the Captain, our ship is called the Centurion, of thirty guns, the brave David Jenkins commander. We set out by morning's tide, between ten and eleven; and if you come without a call, you will be the more welcome. So saying, he gave me a familiar shake by the hand, and we parted.

I then went directly home, and, calling Mr. Felton aside, I told him of my success and engagement

in the Centurion, suppressing only the time of my early departure; for I felt that I could not stand the parting with him, and I thought it best to make it as little painful to him and myself, as might be.

During supper, I endeavoured to chat, but I could not. And as Mr. Felton, at times, looked affectionately upon me, I turned my head aside, and a silent tear stole down my cheek.

I spent the night in sighs and tears, and, getting up before day, I took my shoes in my hand, and stepping softly down stairs, would have stolen out at the street-door, but, in that instant, the door of a side parlour, was opened, and, before I could look about, my master had me in his arms. Will you leave me, then, David, will you indeed leave me? he cried. O, David, David, I love you next to my only child. Stay with me yet, my son, O, stay with me, my David, and I will do every thing, I will do all things that may be done for you.

Here I sunk, and was just fainting, under the pressure of his goodness. Do not kill me, my master, do not kill me outright, I cried. You must no longer be burdened by my body of sin and death; as God has forsaken me, I must leave you, my master! let him do with me as he will, and if I perish, I perish. So saying, I broke from him, and away I rushed; weeping and sobbing all the way, as though my heart would cleave in asunder.

The captain received me with great cordiality, and at times called me his namesake, and was very familiar with me. The sailors also, after his example, began to affect me without any appearance of envy; for though I had not been exercised in their profession, yet I was strong, hale, and active, and ready to assist them at every turn.

In

In the mean time, please your Honours, it may appear very extraordinary, though I felt daily compunction, and nightly wept many tears for having offended my God throughout the course of my life; yet I neither prayed to him, nor besought pardon from him, nor applied to him for any kind of support or assistance.

I was now incorporated with a fraternity whose wickedness was of a species quite different from that of my former brotherhood. Our sailors were so far from cheating and defrauding, that they scarce seemed to have any regard for property; and they were as brave a set of fellows as ever trod a deck. But then they were as hardened to any sense of religion or piety as the nether mill-stone; and the sacred and tremendous names of God and his Christ, were of no other import to them than as the balls of a billiard-table, to be tossed and bandied about for sport.

At first this was a matter of great offence and horror to me. Can there be a God, I would say to myself, and can he suffer his tremendous name to be insulted and blasphemed as it is by these wretches? But, alas! I was not as one of the three captives at Babylon; I could not be cast into the furnace, and come forth without a singe. In time this profaneness became less irksome to my ears, and, by degrees, I began to relish and to catch the common contagion.

At times, however, some thoughts of God and a Saviour would come into my mind, and the pious impression of my infancy would return upon me; but I did my best to banish them, as they served but to torment me.

At times, again, I would silently expostulate, as it were, with God. It is true, I would say to him, I have been wicked, desperately wicked through a long course of sinning; but did I not long strive,
and

and struggle, and fight against temptation? If you meant me for yourself, why did you not make me with less proneness to evil? or why did you not give me greater strength to resist?

Again, shocking and blasphemous thoughts would enter into my gloomy soul: As, though the gospel were all a fable, and religion nothing but priestcraft: That all events were of chance: That men were good or evil, merely according to constitution; and that either there was no God, or he was too great, or too distant, to concern himself with the insignificant affairs of mortals. But these infusions of the tempter were never of long continuance; and again I would return to *believing* and *trembling*.

Our ship had been destined to protect the trade in the Levant. Within the space of five months, we had rescued from the captors six English ships, and made prize of three stout frigates, of those African pirates who war upon the world; when the boy from the mast-head cried out, A sail! We immediately made chase, and found by evening that we had gained considerably upon her; but as the night came on thick and hazy, we shortened sail, and lay to till morning, but hung out no lights.

At dawn of day, we renewed the chase, though no sail was then in sight; but we had not continued it above four or five leagues, when we clearly discerned the same vessel, and perceived that she altered her course, and was bearing down toward us.

Hereupon we shortened sail, and waited for her. But we had not waited long, till we perceived a second vessel that seemed in chase of the first; and some time after saw a third that seemed in chase of the two former.

On this the lieutenant, an old and experienced sailor, looked somewhat blank, and desired that the captain

captain would instantly call a council of war. Gentlemen, says he, the many captures we have lately made could not fail of informing our enemies that we are in these seas: and I apprehend, with great reason, that they have made choice of their best means to over-reach and overmatch us, and to fall with their united force upon us. And indeed ye may already perceive, that the ship which we had in chace has shortened sail, and waits to be joined by her two comforts, whom she seemed so lately to fear. I think, as the jockey says, that we have more than foot for them; and all the question is, whether Old England shall make use of her fleet to fly, while she has any hands left wherewith she may fight? At this they cried, with one voice, No flying! no flying! let them come on, the circumcised dogs, as many as may be of them; we will neither take nor give quarter, they or we must to the bottom! To work then my brave lads! cries Captain Jenkins, for we are likely to have as warm a bout of it as we could wish.

To bustle went all hands. We had a clear ship in a moment; and, for the first time, stowed our hammocks in the nettings. The captain then chusing a dozen of the best marksmen, he disposed them in the tops, with strict orders to direct their fire only at those who appeared to be officers.

Our ship at this time was full manned with about two hundred and seventy spirits, all as ready and desirous to go and meet death as a beau to go to a ball, or an alderman to a feast.

The three comforts were now joined, as our mate had foreseen, and bore down upon us right before the wind; and then it was that my sins came crowding into my mind, and I believe I was the only person in the ship's company who trembled.

They

They all came up with a desperate boldness; and while one attacked us on our bow, a second lay upon our quarter, while the third bore away under our stern, and raked us fore and aft with her whole broadside; nor were we idle in the mean time, but plied our guns with such spirit and success as soon obliged them to sheer off.

Our ship was of English oak, and stood their shot to a wonder; our metal was also much weightier than theirs; but then they outnumbered us three to one, in men and guns.

Having got out of the reach of our shot, they moved off, as intending to make their escape; but, having repaired their damage, as well as time would allow, they returned upon us with two-fold resolution and fury.

Then it was Gentlemen, that such a scene was opened, as was sufficient to strike hell itself with horror.

They now entertained us with a new kind of warfare. For getting up within pistol-shot, they tossed their granadoes or hand shells among us, that were filled with broken bottles, and with rusty and ragged pieces of old iron. These did fearful execution, and our deck was quickly covered with blood and brains, and pieces of human flesh, while the noise of the cannon could scarcely drown the screams of the wounded, and the groans of the dying.

In this desperate situation we loaded all our guns with grape-shot, which made such havoc among our enemies as obliged two of them to sheer away again as fast as they could, while the third kept playing upon us at a distance, till we forced her also to follow her consorts.

We now had leisure to clear our deck, and, with sorrowful hearts threw our dead companions overboard.

Having

Having once more set all to rights, we bore down on all the three; but they crowded away from us, maintaining a running fight with their stern-chace; and as they levelled their shot almost wholly at our rigging, by evening we were incapable of further pursuit.

Mean while we had plied them with our cannon so well, that, as it began to wax dusky, we perceived the crew of the hindmost in much confusion, and making signals of distress to their consorts. Soon after we saw them heave out their boat, and they had scarce crowded into her when their ship went down. Hereon we gave a great shout, which we repeated on seeing their boat overset. But, as the Moors are excellent swimmers, I suppose most of them got safe, and were taken in by their companions. In the mean space our most gallant Captain Jenkins had his right leg and thigh carried off by a cannon-shot; I think it was the last shot the enemy fired.

As I stood by my captain's side, I caught him in my arms before he fell to the board, and cried out for the surgeons; but the effusion of blood was so great, and so impossible to be staunched, that we quickly despaired of any life for him.

As I supported him on deck with my right arm, he found himself growing faint, and turned his face to me. David, said he, I am not afraid to die, for I am a Christian. I believe, as surely as I am here, that Christ came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief; and he is so great and so gracious, that he will not suffer hell or the grave to disappoint him of an end for which he paid so dear a price. Here, my David, here is my purse and my watch, which I bequeath to your love as my last legacy; and here is my diamond ring with which I entrust you, as a token to my dear daughter, if ever it shall be your fortune to revisit Old England. And if you should

go to London, my dear David inquire out my good old friend, Alderman Bicker; tell him of my behaviour during your service with me, and that I beseech him to use his interest with our Protector, in procuring my pay for my poor sweet child.

And that I will, right heartily, cried out Sir Thomas. I will also speak a word for yourself, my lad; the Protector cannot refuse his favour to one who has had the honour of serving in the action of the Centurion, whose fame our very enemies have spread through Europe. But, pray, proceed in your narration; I long to hear the event of so interesting a scene.

Though we greatly grieved for our captain, we were still more concerned for the honour of England, lest our good ship should fall into the hands of the barbarians. For she now lay like a hulk on the face of the water. She could neither pursue nor avoid an enemy; and, though she had been in plight, we had not hands left sufficient to work her.

Night come on apace, hostilities ceased on both sides; the pirates hung out lights, to prevent, as we supposed, their parting from each other; and we mournfully called a muster of our men, in the dark; whereon we found that, of two hundred and seventy odd men, we had but fifty remaining, twenty of whom were wounded, though not disabled.

Come, my lads, cried the old Lieutenant, it is as good to be merry as sad. We have worked enough to-day to give us an appetite. Let us have something to eat, and a bowl of punch; and, if we die by morning, let us not die with cold hearts, and empty stomachs. Moreover, for your encouragement, I take upon me to promise, that if you will be guided, I will make you masters of one of yonder vessels before sun rise.

We

We engaged compliance to a tittle ; and accordingly, after we had refreshed ourselves plentifully, he ordered our boats to be heaved overboard, and let drive with the wind. We then set our watch, and went down to take a few hours repose.

Two hours before day we were roused by the Lieutenant, and the first thing we did was to bore a large hole in the side of our ship about a foot below water, for which we had an occasional plug prepared.

As soon as the day dawned, we set watches to give us timely notice of the enemies approach ; and then lay down on our small arms out of observation.

The pirates, as we presumed, held up their glasses ; but seeing neither men nor boats in our ship, they concluded, that we had made an elopement by night, and came on without precaution or preparation.

As soon as they had arrived within about half a league, our watchman, according to order, drew forth the plug, and, creeping upon deck, crouched down with us.

The consorts had agreed to board our ship on each side, in confidence of a rich and unresisting prize. But the moment that we heard the first of them rustling along-side, and perceived that they were beginning to get up our side, we jumped up, as one man, and setting up a great shout, and overturning all we met, leapt into their vessel.

Never was amazement like that of the enemy ! They scarce made any resistance, and, in less than a minute, not a Moor was left upon deck.

Mean time the other pirate had boarded our late vessel, almost to a man. They had heard, indeed, the shout, with the clamour and groans of their fellows, but did not rightly know what to make of it ;
till,

till, moving close round the head of our former ship, we shot the few who were left in the second frigate; then, throwing out our grapplings we towed her off, and then bored and sunk her in the face of her owners.

They thereupon set up such a yell of despair and horror as was affecting, even to the hearts of their enemies. At length they turned the cannon of the Centurion upon us, but we soon got out of reach of their shot; and by the time we were about three leagues from them, we saw our good Centurion go to the bottom, the glorious tomb of her noble captain.

We now thought that, of about a thousand assailants, there was not one left to carry tidings to their native country of their defeat. But going down to the state-cabin, I saw a young man richly dressed, and of a noble aspect, leaning wounded upon a couch, with three attendants about him.

As I entered, he gave me a look that seemed compounded of apprehension and courage, and accosted me in broken English, for he had travelled much, and resided for a season in London.

I know, said he, that I am your prisoner; I also know what I am to expect. Draw your cutlafs then, and let me join my countrymen! No, Sir, I replied, you have nothing to fear from me. A man, who deserves that name, owes nothing but love to man except when he is assaulted; the brave see no enemy in the feeble or the conquered.

Where have you learned, he cried, the sentiments of my own soul? But your generosity shall lose you nothing; demand what ransom you please, and it shall be paid you. I am not commander in chief, I answered; but, as far as my influence reaches, you are free as air, and shall be bound to
us

us by nothing but your affections. Then, stretching forth his arm, Your hand, my brother ! he cried ; and giving me a kind squeeze, the tear came into his eye.

I went directly on deck, and informed our little crew, now reduced to thirty-three, of what had passed between the noble Moor and myself ; and told them, I hoped they would be so generous as to make my promise good. To this the greater number gladly assented, but some of them murmured. Hereupon I remonstrated, that we were already rich enough ; for we had brought all the money out of our own ship, beside the great treasure in the pirate-frigate, which we had not yet divided. I further represented, that we knew not what the events of war or fortune might be ; and that it would not be imprudent to make a friend on the African coast, who, in all appearance, was a person of high consideration ; and with these reasons, at length all appeared to be satisfied.

I then carried the pleasing tidings to my new friend, and took with me our only surviving surgeon, who dressed the wound in his thigh, which had been made by a musket-ball.

As soon as the surgeon had withdrawn, the noble Osmyn of Petra, for so he was called, presented me with his purse, and a carbuncle-ring of extraordinary value, and pressed them earnestly upon me ; but I as peremptorily refused them, and this refusal appeared to distress him greatly.

During the five days in which we continued together, I had him as tenderly and as honourably attended, as our circumstances would admit ; and I spent with him all the time I could spare from my duties and great fatigues upon deck, as all the hands we had were kept busily employed in splicing the ropes, refitting the mangled sails and rigging, and in repairing the breaches of the vessel,

for

for our shot had bored her sides quite through in several places.

On these accounts we sailed but heavily, still making towards the Streights, and daily wishing to meet or be overtaken by some English ship of force; to which we might safely confide ourselves and our treasures.

On the sixth morning, having arrived within twenty leagues of the mouth, the day discovered to us, that we were almost within shot of a ship that carried English colours. Hereat we rejoiced with exceeding great joy, and slackening our sail, and heaving out a small boat, ten of us slipped into it, and away we rowed with all our might. As we approached, we saw numbers, in English dresses, walking to and again on deck; and, getting along-side, they threw ropes over to us, and we mounted with great alacrity.

Hitherto we were so intoxicated with joy, that we had not the precaution to hail them, till we found ourselves in the very thick of our enemies. I looked round and seeing none but tawny and hostile faces about me, I civilly demanded who, and of what country they were; when a ruffian gathering his spittle spirted it full in my face, and, at at the same time, gave me a buffet on the side of my cheek. Then I did not once reflect either where or among whom I was, but with one stroke of my fist, I stretched him flat upon the deck: then throwing up the heels of another who had raised his arm against me, he fell with his head foremost across his fellow; and twisting round on a third, who had seized me behind by the shoulder, I dragged him under me, and we fell together upon the board. Here a crowd of them gathered over me, and, each helping to hold a leg or an arm, I was bound with cords that crushed my flesh to the very bone, and then tumbled with kicks, like a dog, along the deck.

Mean

Mean time my nine companions who had offered to interpose, were also seized and bound, and cast into the hold.

For about three hours I lay in excessive anguish, though through a sort of stubborn pride, I endeavoured to suppress my groans. In the interim I felt the ship begin to move, and soon after I perceived all in a bustle about me. Again I heard from within and without, several discharges of small arms, and as I saw several Moors fall lifeless or convulsive, and biting the deck around me, I rightly concluded that the ships were engaged. I gave a long and deep groan, and I cried aloud, O, my countrymen! my brave countrymen! why am I not with you? why have I not the happiness of dying with you and for you? and my heart was so wrung that I fainted quite away.

I afterwards learned that my true and valiant fellows had refused to submit upon summons: that the pirate, seeing them so few, and being desirous of saving the frigate for their own use, had attacked them with small arms, which were warmly answered on our part; when, having dropped or disabled above half of our brave English, with two of Osmyn's attendants, who happened to be upon deck, they entered and mercilessly butchered the remainder, among whom was our old mate and surgeon.

Mean time I lay insensible to all that passed, till a ruffian seeing me pale and lifeless, in all appearance, gave me a wring by the nose. Hereupon I waked to the bitterest sensations. It remembered me of my gallant messmates, who had so loved and caressed me above my merits; and my tears, without sigh or groan, went in streams down my cheeks.

At length I heard a voice, a known voice, as I thought, crying, Where is my friend, where is my brother

brother David? and turning my head a little, I saw my noble Osmyn just entering the ship.

O, Gentlemen! be not apt to judge hardly of all who have not learned Christ, by the form and by the letter. Osmyn, my Osmyn proves, that he may be in the heart of those who never acknowledged his name, although they have felt his power. And indeed, as the apostle writes, those who never learned his law, yet, having his law, or rather himself, in their hearts, shall be justified.

Having instantly cast an eye of searching love around, he 'spied where I lay, and coming and throwing himself beside me, he put one arm about, and cried, O, my brother! my brother David? is it thus that my people use you? I grieve that you Christians should beat us all to nothing in honour and humanity. He then took out his knife, and having tenderly cut my cords, he strained his own ability to help me to rise.

He then called for the captain, who came bowing to him with great respect. Their discourse was long and earnest. At length Osmyn rose high in passion, and gave the captain a back stroke with his hand across the face. I observed his choler swelling, almost to suffocation; but he suppressed his indignation, and retired in silence. I heard Osmyn then giving some orders to the men; but, as I was a stranger to their language, I knew not the purport of any thing that passed. Soon after, however, I saw my nine companions brought from the hold and unbound. And Osmyn, turning to me, desired me to tell my people, that they were all free; and that as soon as we landed in Barbary, he would take the first means of sending them with honour to their native country. Ah! my Lord, I cried, I am sorry that you struck the captain; he has many adherents here, and will certainly seek some method of revenge. He dare not, he dare not,

not, replied my friend ; the villain would have disputed with me the property of my own frigate, which I manned and fitted out at my own expence. But if I hear or see any more of his insolence, as soon as we land I will complain to the Dey my uncle, and have the rogue impaled alive.

He then ordered out the long-boat, and, turning to me, said, I am going David, to take an account of what effects are left in my ship; and I would take you with me if you were in a condition to go; but I will soon return, and, in the mean time, order the surgeon to do his best for allaying the swelling in your limbs.

During his absence, the ship's company, and even the captain, whose name was Barbar, behaved themselves toward me and my fellows with great, though silent, civility ; and a plentiful mess was served up to us for dinner. But during our repast I observed, that the captain called such and such of his men to the quarter-deck, where he held with them a long and whispering kind of conversation.

These fellows, as it seems, were the most barbarous and bloody of all their barbarous and bloody countrymen. Having taken the ship wherein we then were, a merchantman, carrying about twenty guns, they had massacred every creature on board, and then dressed themselves in the clothes of the English, in order to inveigle others in the like calamity ; while they dispatched their own frigate back to Tunis to get recruits.

My noble friend did not return till late in the evening. He then ordered supper to be got ready, and the state-cabin to be prepared for him and me to lie in ; but I whispered and besought him to excuse me for declining that honour, as I perceived that the favours which he did me, had already given much umbrage and offence to his countrymen.

I know

I know not whence, or for what purpose, forebodings may come; but all that night my spirits were exceedingly sad and depressed; and though my fellows and I were put to lie in a part of the ship, the most remote from my friend, yet I imagined that I heard secret treadings and mutterings; and again, at dead of night, that I heard the distant sound of trampling and struggling, as of people in doing and receiving violence.

I was still sore from the tyings and the bruises which I had received; when, toward the end of a sleepless night, a gang of armed ruffians entered the place where we lay, and loaded us with irons. They then took away all our clothes and treasures, and threw to each of us a canvas shirt and drawers, as slaves prepared for the market.

The moment they laid their hands upon me, it occurred that they would not have dared to do it, if they had not first made away with my dear friend and patron; at which thought my soul grew instantly sick, and a dark cloud of sorrow fell heavily upon it.

Sore and shackled as I was, I got immediately on deck, and looked wistfully out to sea, but could discover no frigate. I then shuffled along as fast as I could to the cabin, where I had parted the night before with my Osmyn, and looking in at the door, I cried aloud, Where are you, Lord Osmyn, where are you, my master! my friend! my dear Osmyn! where are you, where are you?

When no answer could be had, I returned wild with rage and grief, and notwithstanding my chains, had I not been disabled by my contusions, I should have done my best to throttle every man I met. But all I could do was to wring my hands, and roar aloud to all around. Ye butchers! ye cut-throats! ye villains of all villains! what have
ye

ye done with your Lord, what have ye done with your master, what have you done with my friend, with my Osmyn, my Osmyn?

For two nights and two days I tasted nothing but water, which I drank in large quantities, as my soul, as well as body, was in a ferment and fever. On the third day, the captain fearing that I would die of grief, and that he should lose what he proposed to get by my sale, sent a kind of interpreter to me, to let me know, that on the night in which I parted with Osmyn, he and the captain soon after had some warm words concerning their rights in the frigate, and in the English now on board; whereupon Osmyn swore, that he would not remain any longer in his ship; and that, taking with him a number of hands, he reembarked in the frigate, and directly set sail.

As this tale carried with it some face of a fact, I grew easier in my mind; and, on the very day following, having anchored in the bay of Algiers, my fellows and I were taken into the town, and sold at public market.

I happened to be bought by one of the Dey's factors, who immediately sent me to work at his country palace.

This work was a most stupendous undertaking. Above five hundred men had been daily employed in it for two years past, and yet a third of it was not done when I arrived.

A large lawn extended itself in the front of the palace, and here the Dey had ordered a great canal to be dug, and from its excavation a mount to be raised, whose base measured three hundred yards in circumference. The ascent was easy and spiral, much resembling the prints you have seen of the tower of Babel. The border of this ascent was adorned all the way with lofty cedars interlaced with all sorts of aromatic and flowering shrubs; and from the top before I left it, was to be seen the bay, the shipping, the city, and country all around, while

while distant mountains on the one hand, and an extent of ocean on the other, alone bounded the prospect.

You will think it very extraordinary, Gentlemen; when I assure you, that, till I was in a state of slavery, my mind never was free. Hitherto I had been the slave of sin, and of appetite, of passions, and of fears. But here I counted to set up my rest for life. I had no parents, no wealthy kindred, no friend upon earth, to whom I might look for a pennyworth of ransom. There was therefore no further prospect for me, there was nothing further left to incite my desire, or to excite my concern; and I sunk gradually, as it were, down into the peace of my own nothingness.

I had been lately the possessor of the value of some thousands, and now I had not wherewithal to purchase a morsel of bread. But I looked back on the many scenes of my many wickednesses, and I did not look up to, but looked down before my God, and cried, Not enough, it is not yet enough, O Lord! something sharper, something heavier! some punishment that may expiate and reconcile me to my God!

One night as I lay on my bed of stubble, I looked up to God, through the cloud of my own iniquities, and said, In life, O my Lord, lay what thou pleasest upon me, but, in the hour of death, save, save me from the judgment! Whereupon something within me said, Fear not, thou vile wretch, fear not, thou worm David, for nothing shall be able to pluck thee out of my hand. This gave me great consolation, and consolation was followed by peace, and peace was followed by pleasure; insomuch that I possessed more of the sweetness of heart-felt enjoyment, than came to the share of twenty sensualists.

The Dey or regent then being was called Ali Eben Buchar. He was a great warrior, and yet a
man.

man of an amiable character, which is rarely the case with Moorish governors. He had been at Constantinople, when I was enslaved; and, on his return, he was so solicitously engaged in matters of state, that he was not at leisure to come and see our works. Toward the end of the second year of my servitude, he arrived with a pompous train. He was a portly and comely personage, though his complexion was a deep olive. He expressed high delight on surveying what we had done: and he ordered a festival of three days to be proclaimed for his labourers, with sports, martial exercises, and prizes for the victors.

Great preparations were made for this entertainment. In a plain, on the left of the palace, a square of half a mile diameter was inclosed with pales; within which none were permitted to enter, save the Dey and his train, with those who laboured in his several works, amounting to about a thousand men. On one side, within the pales, a throne was erected, with two seats, and lower benches were placed on either hand.

Early on the morning of the first appointed day, the festival was opened by the sound of trumpets and horns, and other martial instruments.

It had been a custom among us of the labourers who were young and active, when the day's work was over, to divert our fellows with various exercises and feats, such as wrestling, running, leaping, and tossing or trundling leaden balls, and so forth; I was therefore up among the soonest, in hopes of distinguishing myself on the occasion.

By the dawning, the city was emptied of its inhabitants, and crowds came on after crowds, from all parts of the country, so that the pales were soon circled by an innumerable concourse.

Then came Ali, with his attendants, and entering the pale, ascended his throne, while his courtiers and guards arranged themselves behind.

Then

Then were exalted, on poles, the prizes that were to be given to such of the slaves, or labourers, as excelled in tossing the javelin, or in hitting a distant mark with the bow or with the sling. But, as I had not been practised in these matters, I contented myself, for this day, with being a spectator. Some of the candidates, on this occasion, were extremely expert, and would send an arrow, or sling a stone, more directly to the mark than any European could shoot a musket-bullet; accordingly the generous Ali added freedom to the prizes which they had won, and immediately preferred them among his troops.

After this, Ali, to entertain his people, ordered a dozen of his courtiers to run at the ring. Immediately a number of neighing steeds, richly caparisoned, were led by lackeys into the lists. The young nobles, without stirrup or saddle, vaulted lightly into their seats, and turning and winding their fiery horses with wonderful command and address, gave high delight to the spectators. Each of them then caught a javelin, which was tossed to him by an attendant; and setting out, successively, almost at their speed, three of them, in mid-course, bore off a small ring of brass, from the thread by which it hung, on the point of his lance.

After this, again, a great number of burlesque comedians entered the pales, in order to act one of their African drolls or pantomimes; some of them represented men, some tygers, lions, and bears; others ghosts, and others goblins. But I could make nothing of such a jumblement of intention, although it gave great diversion to the populace. And thus ended the sports of the present day.

While the people retired homeward, several waggons were drawn in, heavy laden with victuals and cooling liquors, wherewith all the slaves and labourers were plentifully regaled.

The

The second day was ushered in with the like pomp as the former; and prizes were set up for lifting the weight, for tossing the coit, and for pitching the bar.

At a little distance from the front of the throne, a ring was fastened to a leaden mass, that weighed above five hundred pounds, and above fifty adventurers successively attempted to lift, but not a man of them could move it. I then advanced, bowing lowly toward the throne, and putting my right hand in the ring, and exerting my powers, I raised it fairly from the ground, whereupon a great shout was suddenly given by all my companions who worked with me at the mount. Hereupon a black came up, of Herculean bulk and brawn, and, desiring that fifty pounds more should be added to the lead, he lifted and swung them in the air with apparent ease, and the prize was accordingly adjudged to him.

A large iron coit was then given to the competitors, and about a dozen of them tossed it to a distance that was thought extraordinary. I then took it up, and threw it three foot beyond the farthest. But again, the black slave came up, who was not of our company, and tossed it two feet beyond my cast, and consequently atchieved the second prize.

A long and massive bar was then presented to us, but all refused to take it in hand, till the same black seized it, and, putting one end to his foot, pitched it off to a distance that raised a cry of admiration. I then took my turn, and giving my whole strength and action to this single cast, I pitched it some inches beyond the throw of my rival, whereupon another shout was given and repeated. The black then was wholly enflamed by envy and resentment, and reclaiming the bar, and exerting all his force, he threw it to a length, that, on admeasurement,
was.

was judged to exceed my cast, and he proudly laid hold on the third prize.

The great Ali then ordered me to be brought before him. I went, and bending on my knee, laid my head to the earth. Rise, said he; I obeyed, and he surveyed me with long and earnest attention. Young man, he cried, you have been this day something unfortunate, but you have not the less merit; put this ring on your finger, it discharges you henceforth from all kind of labour; but it does not enfranchise you, because, for the present, I do not chuse to part with you. I respectfully took the ring, and again bowing to the ground, retired in silence.

A tournament of the young nobles then ensued, wherein great feats of action and prowess were shewn. And the day ended with another droll to which I gave no heed.

The morning of the third day was opened as usual, and prizes were exhibited for wrestling, for running, and for leaping.

Immediately the black champion stepped formidably forth, and challenged any to approach, who desired to be crushed to death, but not a man accepted this charitable invitation. Unwilling, then, that this boaster should carry off the prize without a contest, I stepped from my rank, depending more upon action than force to cope with him. We both stripped to our canvas drawers, and his looks and gestures menaced me with instant destruction. I advanced however to essay him, and he stretched his arms toward me, as a vulture would reach his pounces to seize upon a chicken; when, springing instantly up to him, I put a hand upon each of his shoulders, and vaulting lightly over his head, I turned nimbly upon him, threw up his heels, and laid him at his length on the earth.

As the contrast of our colours had rendered us remarkable to all the spectators, a shout was set up that

that rent the very elements. But the black arose, and roared aloud, with his lion like voice, for justice; and the judges, on weighing the matter, appointed me to another trial, forbidding further fraud.

Again we prepared to engage, and again my black adversary stretched forth his arms, with eyes flashing fire, and features distorted with rage; when retiring from him as if dismayed, I shot forward like lightning, and springing from the ground, I pitched the whole weight of my body into his bosom. This staggered him some steps backward, when continuing to press upon him, I put one foot behind, and he fell under me, with a horrible squelch, upon the sand; and dashing my hand against his forehead, I sprung up lightly on my feet.

Here the people repeated their clamours, which were echoed for a long space from side to side; while I proposed to the judges, that if my rival was not yet satisfied, I would give him the other venture. But the black was so far from being in plight for a third engagement, that he could not rise without help on either hand; and the prize being a fine turban with a diamond button, was put upon my head.

The competitors for the race then came from among the crowd, being fifteen in number, lightly equipt for the purpose; and I also put on a thin canvas waistcoat that came close to my body.

In the front of the throne, a long pole was set up, from whence we were to start, and another pole was erected on the further side, round which we were to run, and so return to the post from whence we set out.

We were all arranged in a line, and Ali himself was to give the word, when one of our fellows, either thinking, or pretending to think, that the word was given, started away, the rest followed,

and I was left alone, quietly standing by the post. Why do not you set out? said Ali. When your Highness shall be pleased to give the word. Away, then! he cried, and away I sprung.

As I found that I was gathering them up very fast, I suspended my speed, and lingered behind the hindmost, till they had all turned the post, and extended in a long line before me. I then started away, and passed one, and then another, till, having passed them all, I left the foremost at a distance behind me, and seized the goal; whereon Ali himself gave a cry of admiration, which was answered from all sides by all his people.

I was then presented with a velvet tunic embroidered with gold; and some smaller matters were given to the two who came next to me in speed.

The candidates for the third prize then rose from the ground where they had sat to repose themselves; for they were the same persons who had been competitors in the race. A scarlet girdle was stretched along the grass, as a mark from whence the rivals were to set off on their leap. And each of them took a run, till they came to the appointed limit, and then sprung forward with their utmost agility.

As this, of all others, was the article of bodily exercise wherein I excelled, I stood by as an unconcerned spectator, till the contest was over. I then measured with my eye the length they had passed. Then, taking two men, I set them in mid-space, and placing a pole upon their heads, I took a run, and throwing myself head foremost over the pole, I turned in the air, and alighted six inches beyond the farthest leap; whereupon I was presented with a collar adorned with gems of great lustre.

Ali then ordered two troops of his lightest horse to come forward. Accordingly they entered the pale, and, dividing, they retired to opposite sides
of

of the lifts. The populace then fell back, and cleared the intermediate space, and the young officers set forward, on a half-gallop, at the head of their troops.

Never did I see such action, such horsemanship. The officers, as they rode swiftly forward, would toss their lances aloft, and then catch them in mid air; and again they would cast them to a distance before them, and, stooping, take them from the ground in the midst of their speed.

The troops then met, as should seem, in mortal opposition; and breaking their frail lances against each other, they drew the wooden sabres, and each, passing his adversary, gave a back stroke to his neck with such force and agility as was truly alarming. Their ranks then appeared to be broken on either part. And, instantly forming themselves into little rhombs, or squares, or wedges, they fought and mixed together, as in a country dance, with the most regular confusion that ever was beheld.

This was justly delightful to all the spectators; and I regretted their departure for the ridiculous entrance of a third pantomime.

While this droll was preparing, I received an order from Ali, to dress myself in the prizes which I had won, and to attend him.

I obeyed, and presented myself before him. What is your name, young man? David, so please your Highness. Are you of Christ or of Mahomet, David? My will is with Christ, so please you; but, while I confess him with my lips, my whole life has denied him. Then, David, if you will but forsake Christ, and turn to Mahomet, you shall be the friend of Ali, and he will heap treasures, and titles, and great honours upon you. Ah, my lord! I cried out, though I hold my Christ but by a frail and feeble thread, yet I would not quit that thread for a chain of golden links, that

should bind the whole wealth of the world to my possession. And why would your Highness desire the service of a traitor? He who proves a traitor to his God, so please you, can never prove true to any master.

Well, David, said he mildly, we may talk of these matters hereafter. In the mean time, before I do you any grace, I ought at least to do you justice. You have already received the rewards of your valour and your activity, but you have not yet received the reward of your obedience. You were the only one, brave David, who, at the risk of your own honour, attended on my word, and here I give you an earnest of the recompence that I intend you.

So saying, he presented me with a large and massive fabre, whose handle was studded with gems of great value. I received it on my knee; he then continued, Ask me now, David, what further gift you demand, except your dismissal, and it shall be granted you, to a tenth of the treasure in my coffers.

When he had spoken, my eye was caught by one of his retinue, and immediately I recollected the features of the pirate Barbar.

I instantly cast myself prostrate before his throne, and cried aloud, Ah, generous Ali! may God multiply to you treasures and blessings a thousand-fold! I ask none of your treasures and possessions, O Ali! I only ask the head of that traitor, the head of Barbar; I ask but blood for blood: let him restore to me my friend, my brother, my lord Osmyn; he is a murderer, a traitor, and such I will prove him by night or by day, by sea or by land; at any weapons, against any odds, I will prove him a traitor.

While I spoke, thus impassioned, all about appeared under the utmost consternation; and Barbar trembled

trembled and turned pale, but did not dare to quit his station.

Rise, David, said Ali, and tell me what friend, what Osmyn thou dost mean? All I know of him, my Lord, is, that his name was Osmyn of Petra, and that he was nephew to some great prince in this part of the world.

Why, you dream surely, David, replied the regent, Osmyn of Petra was my own nephew; and he perished, with all his crew, by the hands of the English.

He did not perish by the hands of the English, I cried; the English were his preservers, his friends, his attendants, and he perished by the hands of his own countrymen, and more especially by the hands of this traitor Barbar.

Well, said Ali, we have not leisure, at present, to examine into the truth of these allegations; Guards, take that Barbar into safe and close custody, till we are better informed touching the facts with which he is charged. Mean time do you, David, follow in my train; for you must take up your lodging with me this night.

The palace, though it appeared one uniform edifice, was divided into two by an impassable barrier. The one was the occasional habitation of Ali and his attendants: and his wives, with their eunuchs, were lodged in the other, where it was impalement for any man, save Ali himself, to enter.

For three days and nights, after I entered his palace, though I was treated with an attention that gave me much uneasiness, yet I had not the honour of being called to his presence.

At length I was conducted by a private door to his cabinet. My friend David, said he, what hast thou to tell me concerning my dear and brave nephew Osmyn? I then minutely, and at large, related to him the particulars above related: and we
shed

shed many tears, that were mutually provoked by the tears of each other.

Having closed my narration, he cast his eyes down a while, as in deep meditation; and raising them again, he said, The presumptions are strong, very strong, against this man, and yet there is a possibility that he may be guiltless. And though Osmyn was my nephew, my blood, and almost my bowels; yet honour, humanity, demands of us, David, that nine criminals should escape the punishment they deserve, rather than one innocent person should perish in his righteousness. But the great Alla may give us further lights in this business.

In about five days after, a convict was to be ganchèd for the rape and murder of a free woman. He was to be thrown from the top of a high tower, from whose walls projected several sharp and shagged instruments, resembling hooks, scythes, tenters, &c. at certain distances, some below others.

He fainted several times as he was carrying to execution; and then being in an agony, he said he had a matter of the highest consequence to impart to the great Ali, and prayed to be brought directly into his presence.

I was on the spot when he was led in, and looking earnestly at him, recollected that he was the ruffian who had spit in my face, and given me a buffet when I entered Barbar's ship.

Wretch, cried the Dey, what hast thou to say to Ali? That I am guilty, answered the convict, of crimes more heinous and capital than that for which I am to suffer; of crimes that nearly concern yourself, O Ali, but which you shall never know, unless you swear to me, by Mahomet, to mitigate the manner of my death. I do swear it, said the regent, provided the discovery which you make shall be found to be of due import.

He

He then deposed, that on the night in which Osmyn disappeared, the captain, with ten confederated ruffians, of whom he was one, entered the Prince's cabin, and having muffled the faces of him and his attendant, to prevent their crying out, bound them hand and foot, and heaved them through the window into a boat that waited for them: That then getting into the frigate, they massacred the seven Moors to whose care she had been left, and rifling her of all the money, and plate, and valuables they could find, they sunk the frigate, with Osmyn and his attendant in her, and then returned to their own ship.

Here Barbar was sent for, who was brought in chains, into the presence. But as soon as he saw the face of the convict, without waiting to be confronted by his evidence, he rushed violently, with his head foremost, toward the opposite wall; and if a man who was at hand had not caught him by the chain, he would instantly have dashed his skull to shivers.

Ali hereupon, without farther examination, ordered the head of the convict to be struck off in the morning, and Barbar to be impaled in the face of the people.

Never was joy like mine, on hearing this sentence pronounced against Barbar; and I rose early the next morning in order to have the pleasure of being at his execution.

He was so enfeebled by his panics, that they were obliged to draw him on a sledge to the stake; and his countenance had all the impressions of death, despair, and hell represented upon it.

This, however, did not affect me with any other sensation than of that delight which is naturally felt on the gratification of revenge, till the executioners, with unfeeling hearts, and merry tauntings, began to take the wretch in hand. But when I saw them with difficulty and great violence thrust-
ing

ing the stake through his body, which they run up withinside the spinal bone, and so out at the back of his neck, in order to avoid his bowels, and keep him the longer in anguish; when I saw him writhing in agony, and heard his horrible roars and groanings, all my revenge was quickly turned into terror and compassion; his pangs and sufferings, as it seemed, were transferred to my own person, and had I not turned away I should have fainted on the spot.

The Dey, from this time, became extremely fond of me, and familiar with me. He allotted me an affluent pension, with slaves, horses, and attendants. He said I should be to him in the place of a nephew, and of a son, and he called me by the name of David Osmyr.

Some time after, tidings were brought that Called Amurath of Fez was making mighty preparations to invade his dominions. We will more than meet him half-way, cried the gallant Ali; perhaps we may even prevent his threatened expedition. He then summoned his forces from all quarters. I was present when he made a general muster of them. His foot were more formidable for their numbers than their discipline; but his horse were perfectly trained, and made a most brilliant appearance.

The day before he set out, I threw myself at his feet. I will go with you my master, I will go with you, I cried. I will not have any command or post of preference or honour; I only desire permission to fight by your side, that you may witness how greatly I shall dare in your cause; how ready I shall be to take, to my own bosom, all the weapons that shall be aimed at your bosom, my father.

No, David, he replied, my people know you are still a Christian. I could not refrain from shewing the love I have for you; and that might be
matter

matter of jealousy and discontent to my captains. I will leave you here a band of soldiers, with whom you are to encamp within sight of my palace, and to keep these walls from violence, and my women from pollution. But, while you are their guardian, beware that you do not turn an invader, David! I would pardon you any thing but this; I would not pardon you the invasion of my bed, David Osmyn! No, my lord, I cried aloud, I cannot prove ungrateful. Though your women were as obvious to my walks as yonder pavement, and though adorned with more graces than their first mother in paradise, they should have no temptation for me, my master!

The next morning Ali began his march; and having escorted him a piece on his way, I returned to my charge.

That night, as I lay in my tent, I began to call myself to an account. David, said I to my soul, thou hast now gotten preferment, and riches, and honours; thou art, as it were, the second man in the realm, and all this people have thee in high estimation; but art thou the better or the happier man for all this, David? Far otherwise, far otherwise. O frail and vain heart! these guards and these glories have taken hold upon thee, and they have drawn a painted veil between me and my God. To my chain, and my straw, and my nakedness! return me to them, O Lord! return me to my slavery, return me to my labours! I was not then, indeed, gaining conquests, and winning prizes; but I was near to obtaining "the prize of the high calling." My body was not then adorned with gold and pearl; but my spirit rejoiced in "the pearl of mighty price."

In about five weeks after, as I was taking, by moon light, my evening's walk of meditation, on the marble that checkered the pavement before the palace, Muley, an old black, and chief of the

eunuchs of the seraglio, came up and accosted me. Osmyn, said he, taking a bundle from under his arm, I have here a present for you that would make proud the greatest emperor upon earth. It is a complete suit wrought purposely for you by the fingers of the sultana, as also by the fingers of her fair and princely sisters. They have heard of your great achievements during the festival, and they send you this in reward.

So saying, he unfolded the robes to the moon. They were flowered with gold, pearls, and gems of such a vivid lustre as reflected her beams with tenfold brightness.

And what is required of me, Muley, I demanded, in return for this inestimable honour and bounty? Nothing, said Muley, but a single hour's attendance, to give them a short sketch of your life and adventures. Take back your presents, I cried, there is poison and death in them; I will not betray the trust that our master has reposed in me. Nay, said Muley, I affirm to you that there is no such intention. Our ladies are all women of the severest chastity. I will undertake to conduct, and reconduct you back in safety. Neither can our master be betrayed in any degree. They all live together, they love like sisters, and no one keeps a secret from the other. However, they desired me to tell you, that, if you are of a fearful temper, they will not insist on the favour so much expected.

Here I felt myself piqued: No, Muley, I cried, I am no coward. I can dare all honest dangers. I will attend you. But I will not stay Muley. I will let your ladies know, that, in the cause of honour and virtue, I can resist all temptations.

I then called a distant slave, who waited my orders, and giving him the bundle, desired him to lay it within my tent. Where now, Muley? said I. I will shew you, said Muley.

He

He then led me to a large bucket wherein water was accustomed to be raised, by pulleys, to the balcony, and there to be emptied into vessels that stood upon the leads.

You must not enter any door of the lower story, said Muley; for there our domestics inhabit, and might, probably, observe you. But, if you get into this bucket, in a minute or two after, I will raise you by the pulleys, and take you gently in.

Muley then went from me, and was admitted on striking at a distant door while I stood by the bucket, and, observing its first motion, jumped in, and was conveyed to the top of the palace.

Muley there received me in darkness and silence, and taking me by the hand, led me down by a few steps into a narrow apartment that was scarcely enlightened by a glimmering lamp. He there left me again, giving me only a whispering promise that he would quickly return. I waited for him long, however, under great impatience of getting speedily back again. At length he came, and taking me by the hand, without speaking a word, he led me through a long and dark entry, till, coming to a folding door, he touched a spring, whereupon the door flew open on either side, and threw a sudden blaze upon my dazzled eyes.

The saloon upon which it opened, was profusely illuminated, and most sumptuously furnished; but my attention was quickly called from such inferior objects. In the midst a board was covered with an elegant collation. Around it were placed a great number of small sofas; and behind each sofa stood a lady richly adorned, but veiled from the head to the waist.

Again Muley led me to the further end, while I made a low obeisance as I passed the company. He then compelled me to sit, where, by a small turn of my head, I could have a full prospect of each fair-one at table. Then, as by one motion, they

they were all instantly seated ; and again, as by one motion, they all instantly threw up their veils, and I had like to have fallen backward with the suddenness of the lustre that flashed upon my spirit.

All the ladies smiled, and seemed delighted at my astonishment. The Sultana Adelaide sat nearest to me, on the right ; and was no way distinguished from her sisters, but by a small coronet of feathered diamonds that was inserted in her lovely locks. Osmyn, said she, you seem something surprised ; were you never in a *seraglio* before ? Have you no *seraglios* in your country, Osmyn ? No, Madam, I replied, we have no *seraglio* in our country ; but sure, no *seraglio* upon earth ever produced such and so many beauties as now strike my eyes. Heaven alone can exhibit such a constellation of luminaries.

Would you not wish then, said Adelaide, to have such a *seraglio* of your own ? No, Madam, I answered ; without love, in my judgment, there can be no true enjoyment : if ever I love, it can be but the one object, and her I shall love with my whole heart ; true love will admit of no division. Here she looked at me with a tenderness that sunk into my soul, and, taking out her handkerchief, she wiped away a swelling tear.

Another lady then demanded if we had not a woman-market, and if they were not slaves in my country, as they were here ? No, Madam, I replied, our fair ones there are not the subjects of merchandise, but the objects of admiration. No woman in England can be bound to any lover, save by her own affections. There, it is death for any man to have more than one wife, and that after a suit, perhaps of several years. A lady there, of equal beauties to the least excellent in company, would be followed by hundreds of humble and fighting adorers. In England our actions are as free as our hearts ; and the sensibilities of mutual love,
between

between those of the sexes who feel that tender and enchanting passion, constitute the principal happiness of which life is capable.

Happy Englishwomen, happy Englishwomen! was echoed all around.

Alas, cried the lovely Adelaide, how very different is our fate! we are sold, like servile brutes, to any brute of a master. We neither love, nor are beloved; as you now have convinced me, Osmyn. We are subjected to vile desires, which we at once detest and suffer; and, when those desires are gratified, we are cast away as common lumber, to make room for some new comer. Even high as I sit here, the favoured Sultana of my Lord, I may to-morrow be appointed to the meanest offices of his household. This, surely, cannot be a marriage; for, as you have intimated, Osmyn, and as I feel in my own soul, marriage can only consist in an union of hearts. Love cannot be bought or sold; it is of too precious a nature; nothing can purchase, nothing compensate, save its value in love alone.

Here they pressed me to tell them my story; and here I confess, to my shame, that, however vile I appeared in my own eyes, I was ambitious of appearing as honourable and deserving as possible in the eyes of the fair Adelaide. I therefore suppressed what was black, glossed over what was offensive, and enlarged on every thing that I deemed advantageous in my own character.

The night was far spent, by the time I concluded; and the Sultana arising, proposed to shew me the curiosities of an adjoining cabinet. I accordingly attended her, and was astonished at the lustre, the richness, and profusion of the jewels, as well as at the miracles of art that she displayed before my eyes.

On our return, we perceived that our company had absconded. Adelaide grew all crimson, and cast down her eyes. I also was confused, my heart began

began to throb, and I looked about for some pretence to make a quick escape. But—but—in short, Gentlemen, neither my resolutions, nor religion, nor honour, nor gratitude were of any avail against such a temptation; they fell together, an easy victim to the all-conquering Adelaide.

Adelaide was the first to press my retreat. It was not yet day. I found Muley in waiting. We came by the way we went, I stepped into the bucket, and he let me gently down.

As I approached the pavement, I felt a hand behind that seized me violently by the shoulder. I sprung out, and seizing the wretch by the throat, would instantly have plunged my poinard into his bosom; but some power as suddenly arrested my arm, and said to my heart, Beware that thou add not murder to adultery, David!

While I hesitated, a number rushed upon me unaware, they griped me by each arm, and wresting the poinard from me, they bound my hands behind, and led me to the cells of the Imams that stood something aloof from one end of the palace.

As soon as they had brought lights, What, Osmyn, exclaimed their chief, can this be our renowned Osmyn? Is it thus that you repay the favours of your generous and kind master? You are a Christian, cried another; has your Christ then taught you to betray the confidence and trust that is reposed in you? This was a home stab; it went through my heart; but I stood in a shamefaced fullness, and opened not my lips.

Here they went apart, and, having consulted a while, returned. Osmyn, said their chief, you are a brave and a wonderful man, and it is a pity to lose you. Your secret is yet with us; and we swear to you, by our holy prophet, and by the terrible Alla, that if you perform the single condition we enjoin, we will bury what we know in a depth below the grave, and we will recommend you to the
love

love of Ali, and the acclamation of all the people, and we will have you loaded with preferments, and riches, and honours. Name it quickly, I cried, whatever it may be, at the risk, at the loss of my life, I will perform it. It is, said he, no more than to abjure Christ, and to confess Mahomet, whose priests we are; and all the blessings of his paradise shall be showered down upon you.

Here I gave a deep groan; and casting down my head, and shedding a silent tear, without daring to lift my thoughts to heaven: No, no, I cried, though Christ is nothing to me, though I have no interest in him; though he spurns and has rejected me, for time, and for eternity; though I have daily denied him by every action of my life; yet my tongue shall never deny him. In poverty and nakedness, in dangers and in dungeons, in death here, and in hell hereafter, my mouth shall confess him.

Here they went apart again, and returning, told me, that I should have two days to deliberate on their proposal: but that, if I did not comply, I should be impaled alive on the third morning, with all the additional tortures that art could invent.

They then put me into a covered kind of a waggon, and conveyed me to Algiers, where I was cast into a noisome dungeon, bolted down to the ground with irons, sustained with coarse bread and water, and not allowed a ray of light to divert my thoughts from the darkness and horrors of my situation.

Mean time I endeavoured to reinforce my resolution, by repeating to myself the sacred promise, where Christ says, "Whosoever will confess me upon earth, him will I confess before my Father which is in heaven." Mine indeed, said I, is but a verbal confession; but even that, with what I am about to suffer for his sake, may serve to make me less criminal, if not acceptable, in his sight.

I then

I then longed to be brought to the test, while I shuddered at the thoughts of it. At length the day arrived. The Imams came, and once more repeated the question; but I still persisted, though in terms that were scarcely intelligible, for my tongue cleaved with terror to the roof of my mouth.

They then stripped me to these drawers, out of which also they took my money, with other valuables, and every thing I had in the world, and, having tied me to a sledge, I was dragged to the place of execution.

The chief Imam once more asked, if I would renounce the son of David? but I made him no answer, for I was unable to speak. I had seen the preparations; the stake in the hands of the executioners; the fires kindling about me, with horrid instruments ready to be put therein, for the tearing of my frying and quivering flesh from the bones.

Could I then have had the confidence to have turned my soul to God, and to have besought his assistance in that trying and terrible hour, I make no question but he would have given me strength from on high, to defy all that men or devils could do unto me: and I might now, in the regions of his bounty and his blessedness, have been pouring forth my existence, in the grateful and astonished sense of his mercy to such a sinner.

But when I reflected on the writhings of Barbar, the bare sight of which my spirit was not able to support; when I saw such an apparatus of additional torments; and when they took me in hand, for instant execution, I utterly lost my senses; I shrunk inward with fear; my hairs stood on end with horror; my tongue found sudden utterance, and I cried, Stay, stay, I will say, I will do whatever you enjoin.

The Imam then began to pronounce a form of renunciation, which he ordered me to repeat after him;

him ; but I was so panting and breathless, that they were obliged to get a cordial for me to keep me from swooning.

As soon as my spirits were something restored, the Imam again began his impious ceremony, and I make no question but I should have gone through it, however abhorrent to my soul ; but, in that instant, we heard distant shouts and cries, as of many people ; the sound of the clamours drew nearer and nearer ; and soon after, we saw numbers hurrying to and from the city. Their words became now as distinct as they were audible ; Ali is slain, Ali is slain ! was all the cry ; and Amurath comes in full march upon us.

Here all turned suddenly from me, and flying several ways, left me unbound and alone, sitting close by the stake. Seeing this, I began to recover from the fearful and faint condition in which I was ; and, rising, I made the best of my way to the port. There I saw a longboat just about to set off with a number of fellows, much in my own plight, and, taking a run, I sprung from the beach into the midst of them.

A man then demanded in English, if I was one of the ransomed ? Yes, ransomed, ransomed I cried, wonderfully ransomed indeed ; whereupon, without further question, they set up their sail, and, in about two hours, we reached the ship which the consul had appointed to take them in.

For the remainder of that day, I continued in a state that is hard to be conceived. My head and stomach, at times, were disordered by sick fits, and my soul hovered in an astonished and fearful kind of doze, as one not rightly awaked from a dream of horror.

Toward evening I threw myself down in the hold, and sunk into a state of utter oblivion, as I had not slept for the three foregoing nights and days.

The

The day following I found my body something refreshed, but the situation of my mind was like that of a disturbed and tumbling sea after a raging storm. I looked around for comfort, but no comfort was near; I looked afar off for hope, but no hope came in prospect. The sense of existence became a misery under which I was not able to bear up; and could I have had my wish, creation would again have been uncreated.

During the whole of our voyage, I continued very nearly in this distemper of spirit. For though at times I would enter into the frolics and jovial humours of the crew, yet my merriment, at such seasons, was a merriment to madness; and I would again sink, precipitately, into a depth of despondence, whose darkness would admit no ray of consolation.

The tempter would then urge me, by dagger, or by drowning, or by any means, to get rid of a being, that only served to torment me. But again, the dread that I might not get rid of that being, and that death might plunge me into a perpetuity of those pangs in which I saw the wretched Barbar agonizing, this deterred me from hastening the day of my horrid doom, and so I waited in a gloomy and "fearful looking out for judgment."

I would then call myself, at dead of night, before that terrible judgment. Thou fiend David, I would say, wherefore art thou sunk in guilt above all that ever were guilty? It was thy fortune to get three good and kind masters, good and kind above thy wants, and even up to thy wishes; and all these thou hast deceived, thou hast spoiled and betrayed them. Even the Master of all masters, the Master who was my freedom in the midst of my captivity, I was on the brink of denying the Jesus also: nay, I did reject, I did deny him; I promised, I engaged, to reject and deny him; and he will reject thee;
through

through time, and through eternity, he will deny thee, David !

One evening a fearful tempest arose ; and while most of the crew gave some of their little matters to the provedore for liquors, and sat, drowning the sense of danger, and profanely carousing, at one end of the ship ; my companions, who are present, were praying or singing glory to God in the other. Both parties invited me to join them, but I refused to be partaker with either ; for I could not abet in others that wickedness which I condemned and detested in myself ; and I could not think of taking into my execrable mouth the sacred name of that Christ to whom I had so lately turned a false apostate. In the mean time, I held myself as the refugee Jonas, whose crimes brought perdition on all in the vessel ; and I was on the point of advising the mariners to cast me out.

At length the tempest abated, but my perturbations did not abate. I wished to repent, but I deemed myself past the possibility of repentance ; and thus I continued in a state of dissatisfaction and enmity against myself, against my God, against man and woman kind.

As soon as he had closed his story, Take courage and comfort to you, David, said Mr. Fenton. Your case is not near so desperate as your conscientious fears have formed it. Your error lay in trusting to your own sense of duty, and to the strength of your own powers for resisting temptation ; and the best man that ever breathed, with no better a dependence, must inevitably have fallen, as you did, David. You now know your own weakness ; you are taught, by repeated experience, that, in or of yourself, you no more can stand against the enemies of your soul, when they assail you, than a tree, severed from its root, and barely set on end, can stand the assaults of a coming tempest. Keep therefore to your root, David. Never dare, in your
own

own strength, to oppose yourself to a reed. Apply to the Rock, my friend, from whence you were hewn. Cling to him, repose upon him, put your whole confidence in him; and then your weakness shall become stronger than an army with banners; and neither life, nor death, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, shall be able to separate you from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus.

While I spoke, his eyes began to glisten, the cloud of his countenance cleared, his aspect assumed a chearful serenity, he could scarce have been known for the same person; and he cried, I will, I will once more seek to my God; do you, my master, pray him to permit my approach; and in life, or in death, I never will let go my hold of him any more. He then would again have cast himself at my feet, but I hastened to prevent him.

END OF SECOND VOL.



